



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

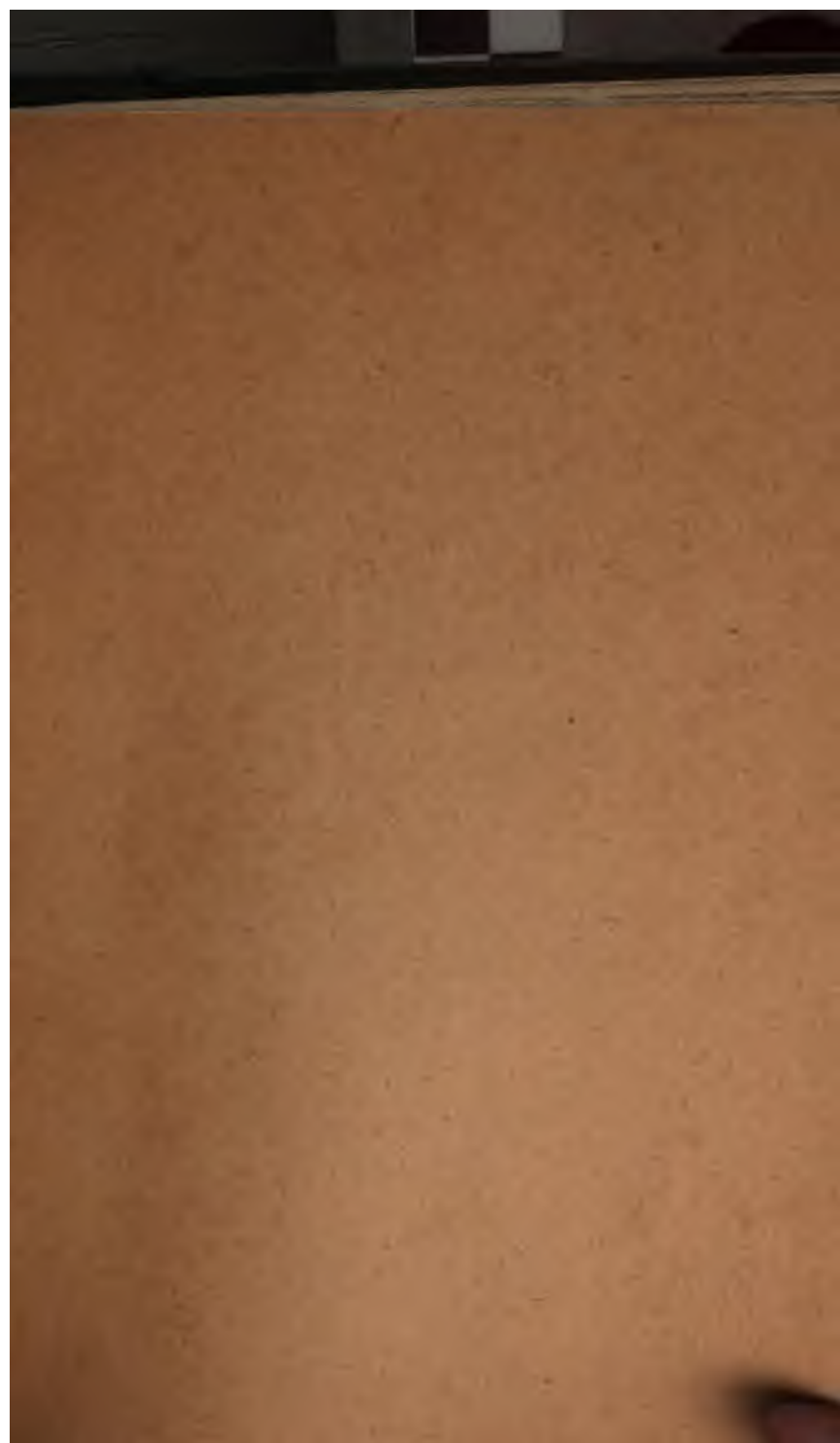
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

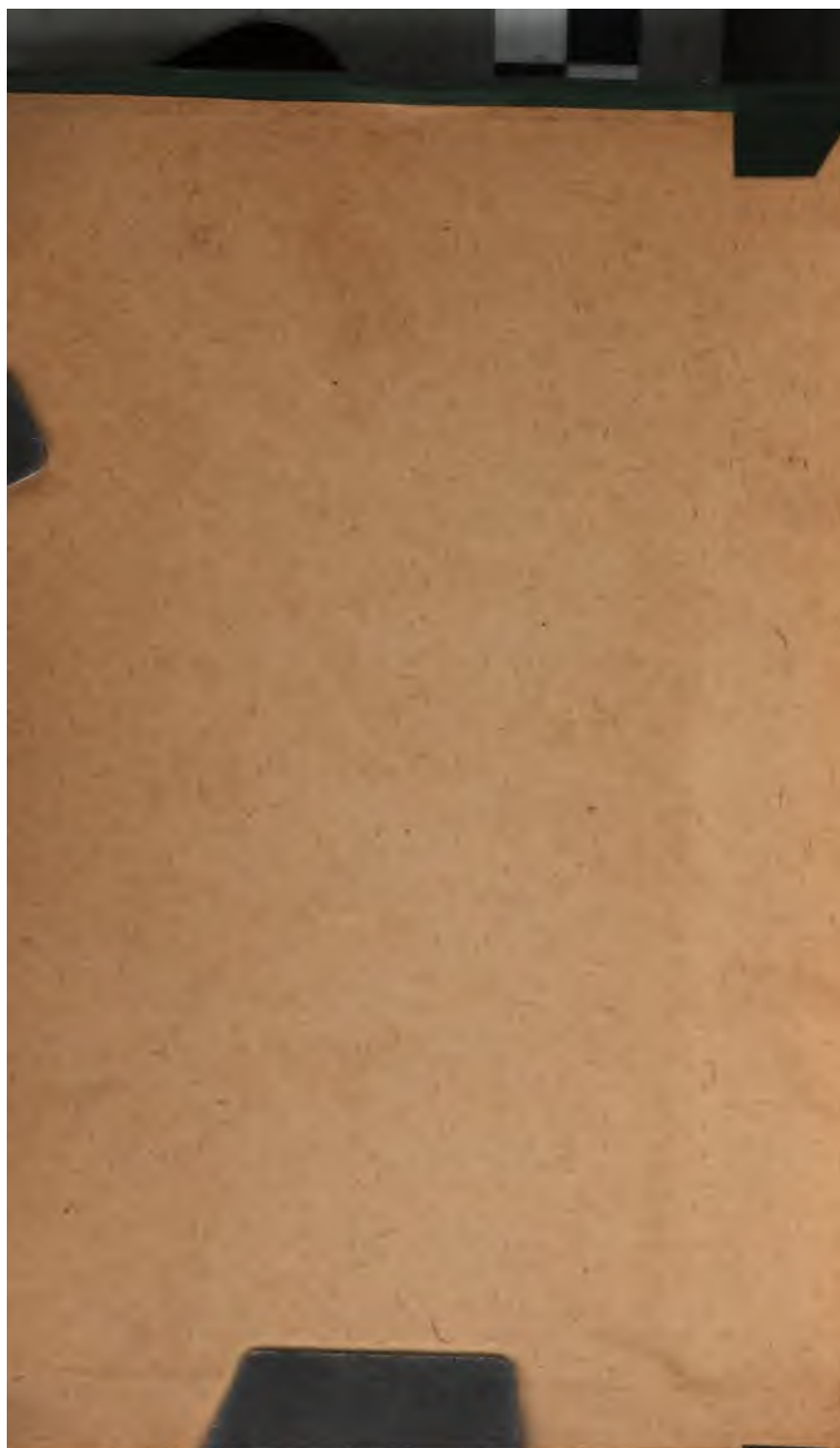
About Google Book Search

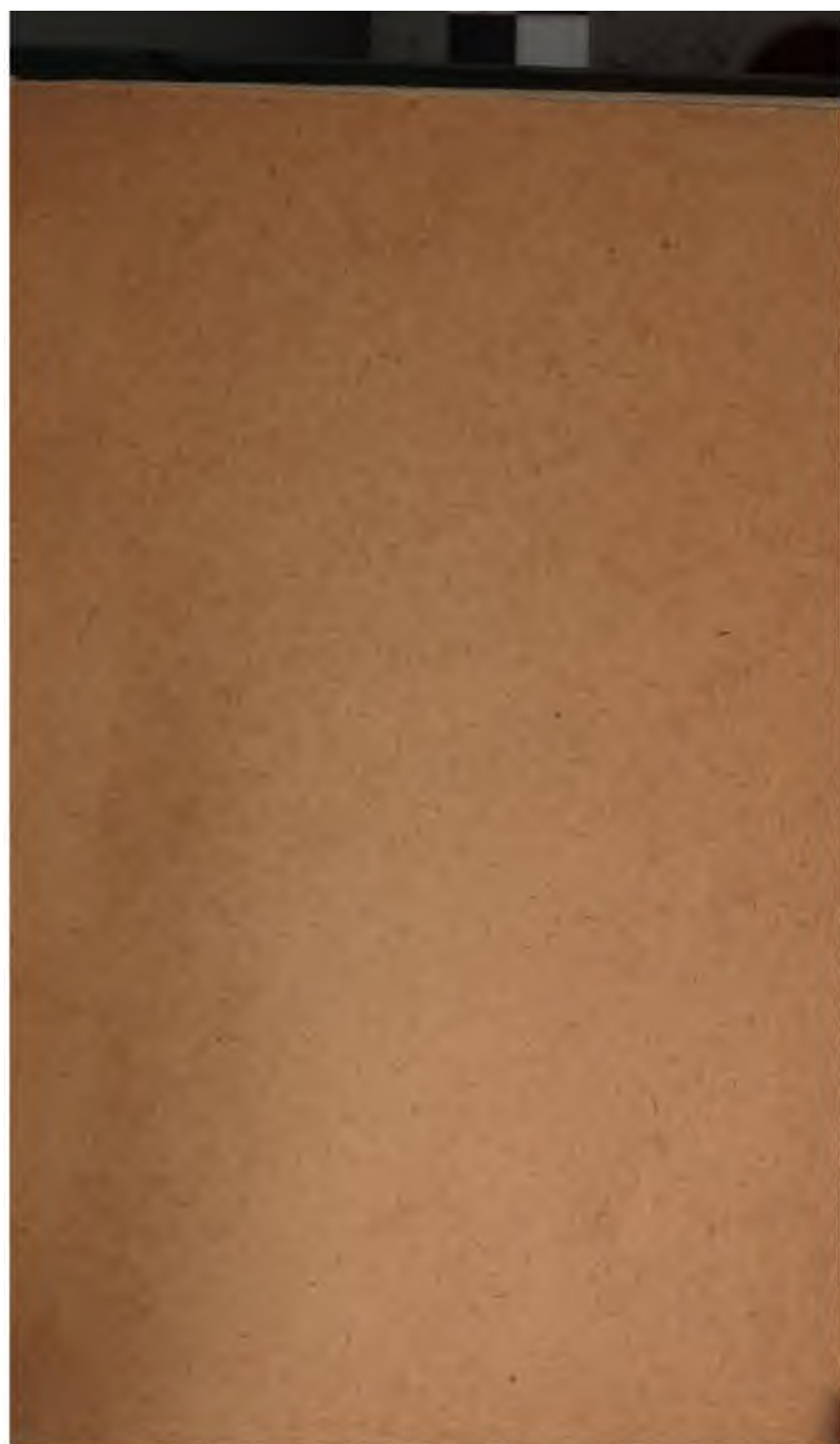
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

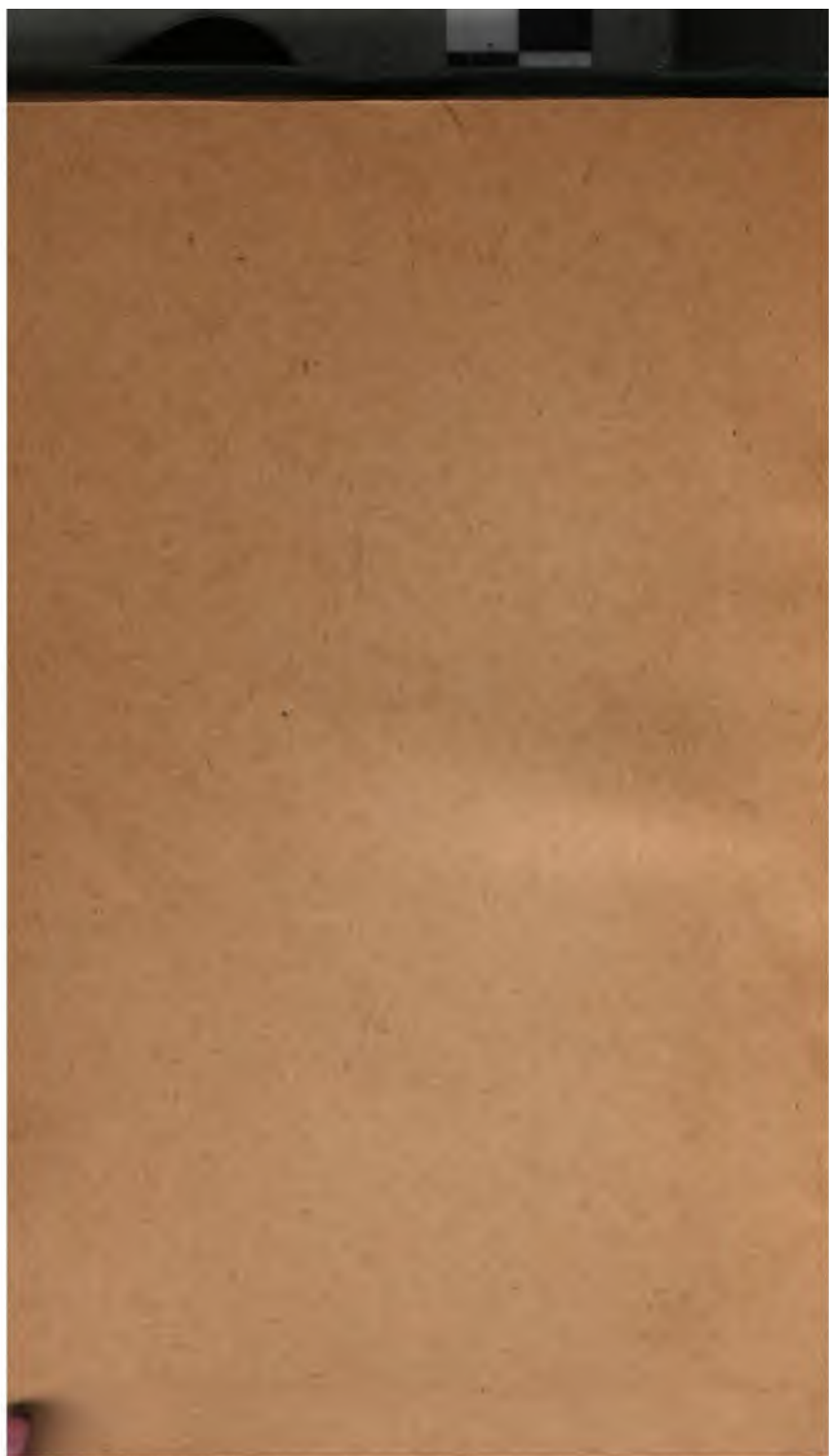












THE
COMPLETE WORKS
IN
VERSE AND PROSE
OF
EDMUND SPENSER.

VOL. VIII.

THE FAERIE QUEENE:
BOOK V. CANT. viii.—xii., BOOK VI. CANT. i.—xii.
TWO CANTOS OF MYTABILITIE.
LETTER TO SIR WALTER RALEIGH.
COMMENDATORY POEMS AND SONNETS.
1590-96.



A, 17059.

CONTENTS OF VOL. VIII.

THE FAERIE QUEENE (*continued*):—

BOOK V.

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL, OR OF IVSTICE (*continued*).

	PAGE
Canto VIII.	1
„ IX.	17
„ X.	33
„ XI.	47
„ XII.	68

BOOK VI.

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF S. CALIDORE, OR OF COVRTESIE.

Canto I.	86
„ II.	101
„ III.	117
„ IIII.	134
„ V.	148
„ VI.	162
„ VII.	177
„ VIII.	194
„ IX.	211
„ X.	226
„ XI.	241
„ XII.	258

BOOK VII.

TWO CANTOS OF MVTABILITIE.

Canto VI.	275
„ VII.	293
„ VIII. (<i>vnperrfite</i>)	312
LETTER TO SIR WALTER RALEIGH, KNT.	315
COMMENDATORY POEMS AND SONNETS	321



Book V.—Cant. VIII.

*Prince Arthure and Sir Artegall,
Free Samient from feare:
They slay the Soudan, drine his wife
Adicia to despaire.*

Nought vnder heauen so strongly doth allure
The fence of man, and all his minde possesse,
As beauties louely baite, that doth procure
Great warriors oft their rigour to repress,
And mighty hands forget their manlinesse; 10
Drawne with the powre of an heart-robbing eye,
And wrapt in fetters of a golden tresse,
That can with melting pleasaunce mollifye
Their hardned hearts, enur'd to blood and cruelty.

So whylome learnd that mighty Iewish swaine,
Each of whose lockes did match a man in might,
To lay his spoiles before his lemans traine:
So also did that great Oetean Knight
For his loues sake his Lions skin vndight:
And so did warlike *Antony* neglect 20
The worlds whole rule for *Cleopatras* fight.

VIII. I

Such wondrous powre hath wemens faire aspect,
To captiue men, and make them all the world reiect. /

Yet could it not sterne *Artegall* retaine,
Nor hold from suite of his auowed quest,
Which he had vndertane to *Gloriane* ;
But left his loue, albe her strong request,
Faire *Britomart* in languor and vnrest,
And rode him selfe vppon his first intent :
Ne day nor night did euer idly rest ; 30
Ne wight but onely *Talus* with him went,
The true guide of his way and vertuous gouernment.

So traouelling, he chaunft far off to heed
A Damzell, flying on a palfrey fast
Before two Knights, that after her did speed
With all their powre, and her full fiercely chaft
In hope to haue her ouerhent at last :
Yet fled she fast, and both them farre outwent,
Carried with wings of feare, like fowle aghast,
With locks all loose, and rayment all to rent ; 40
And euer as she rode, her eye was backward bent.

Soone after these he saw another Knight,
That after those two former rode apace,
With speare in rest, and prickt with all his might :
So ran they all, as they had bene at bace,
They being chased, that did others chase.
At length he saw the hindmost ouertake
One of those two, and force him turne his face ;
How euer loth he were his way to flake,
Yct mote he algates now abide, and answere make. 50

l. 27, (albe . . . request).

But th'other still purfu'd the fearefull Mayd ;
 Who still from him as fast away did flie,
 Ne once for ought her speedy passage stayd,
 Till that at length she did before her spie
 Sir / *Artegall*, to whom she streight did hie
 With gladfull hast, in hope of him to get
 Succour against her greedy enemy :
 Who seeing her approch gan forward set,
 To saue her from her feare, and him from force to let.

But he like hound full greedy of his pray, 60
 Being impatient of impediment,
 Continu'd still his course, and by the way
 Thought with his speare him quight haue ouerwent.
 So both together ylike felly bent,
 Like fiercely met. But *Artegall* was stronger,
 And better skild in Tilt and Turnament,
 And bore him quite out of his saddle, longer
 Then two speares length ; So mischief e ouermatcht the
 (wronger.

And in his fall misfortune him mistooke ;
 For on his head vnhappily he pight, 70
 That his owne waight his necke afunder broke,
 And left there dead. Meane while the other Knight
 Defeated had the other faytour quight,
 And all his bowels in his body braist :
 Whom leauing there in that dispiteous plight,
 He ran still on, thinking to follow fast
 His other fellow Pagan, which before him past.

In stead of whom finding there ready prest
 Sir *Artegall*, without discretion

l. 69, misprinted 'hm' in '96.

He at him ran, with ready speare in rest : 80
 Who seeing him come still so fiercely on,
 Against him made againe. So both anon
 Together met, and strongly either strooke
 And broke their speares ; yet neither has forgon
 His horses backe, yet to and fro long shooke,
 And tottred like two towres, which through a tempest
 quooke. /

But when againe they had recouered fence,
 They drew their swords, in mind to make amends
 For what their speares had sayld of their pretence.
 Which when the Damzell, who those deadly ends 90
 Of both her foes had seene, and now her frends
 For her beginning a more fearefull fray,
 She to them runnes in haft, and her haire rends,
 Crying to them their cruell hands to stay,
 Vntill they both doe heare, what she to them will say.

They stayd their hands, when she thus gan to speake ;
 Ah gentle Knights, what meane ye thus vnwise
 Vpon your felues anothers wrong to wreake ?
 I am the wrong'd, whom ye did enterprife
 Both to redresse, and both redrest likewise : 100
 Witnesse the Paynims both, whom ye may see
 There dead on ground. What doe ye then deuise
 Of more reuenge ? if more, then I am shee,
 Which was the roote of all, end your reuenge on mee.

Whom when they heard so say, they lookt about,
 To weete if it were true, as she had told ;
 Where when they saw their foes dead out of doubt,
 Eftsoones they gan their wrothfull hands to hold,

And Ventailes reare, each other to behold.
Tho when as *Artegall* did *Arthure* vew, 110
So faire a creature, and so wondrous bold,
He much admired both his heart and hew,
And touched with intire affection, nigh him drew.

Saying, fir Knight, of pardon I you pray,
That all vnweeting haue you wrong'd thus fore,
Suffring my hand against my heart to stray :
Which if ye please forgiue, I will therefore
Yeeld / for amends my selfe yours euermore,
Or what so penaunce shall by you be red.
To whom the Prince ; Certes me needeth more 120
To craue the same, whom error so misled,
As that I did mistake the liuing for the ded.

But sith ye please, that both our blames shall die,
Amends may for the trespassse soone be made,
Since neither is endamadg'd much thereby.
So can they both them selues full eath perswade
To faire accordaunce, and both faults to shade,
Either embracing other louingly,
And swearing faith to either on his blade,
Neuer thenceforth to nourish enmity, 130
But either others caufe to maintaine mutually.

Then *Artegall* gan of the Prince enquire, (layd,
What were those knights, which there on ground were
And had receiu'd their follies worthy hire,
And for what cause they chafed so that Mayd.
Certes I wote not well (the Prince then sayd)
But by aduenture found them faring so,
As by the way vnweetingly I strayd,

And lo the Damzell felse, whence all did grow,
Of whom we may at will the whole occasion know.

Then they that Damzell called to them nie, 141
And asked her, what were those two her fone,
From whom she earst so fast away did flie;
And what was she her felse so woe begone,
And for what cause pursu'd of them attone.
To whom she thus; Then wote ye well, that I
Doe serue a Queene, that not far hence doth wone,
A Princeesse of great powre and maiestie,
Famous through all the world, and honor'd far and nie. /

Her name *Mercilla* most men vse to call; 150
That is a mayden Queene of high renowne,
For her great bounty knowne ouer all,
And soueraine grace, with which her royall crowne
She doth support, and strongly beateth downe
The malice of her foes, which her enuy,
And at her happinesse do fret and frowne:
Yet she her felse the more doth magnify,
And euen to her foes her mercies multiply.

Mongst many which maligne her happy state,
There is a mighty man, which wonnes here by 160
That with most fell despight and deadly hate,
Seekes to subuert her Crowne and dignity,
And all his powre doth thereunto apply:
And her good Knights, of which so braue a band
Serues her, as any Princeesse vnder sky,
He either spoiles, if they against him stand,
Or to his part allures, and bribeth vnder hand.

l. 141, misprinted 'then' for 'them' in '96: l. 160, 'herby': ll. 164-5, (of . . . /ky).

Ne him fufficeth all the wrong and ill,
Which he vnto her people does each day,
But that he seekes by traytrous traines to spill 170
Her perfon, and her facred felfe to flay :
That ô ye heauens defend, and turne away
From her, vnto the miscreant him felfe,
That neither hath religion nor fay,
But makes his God of his vngodly pelfe,
And Idols ferues ; fo let his Idols ferue the Elfe.

To all which cruell tyranny they fay,
He is prouokt, and ftird vp day and night
By his bad wife, that hight *Adicia*,
Who counfels him through confidence of might, 180
To / breake all bonds of law, and rules of right.
For ſhe her felfe profeſſeth mortall foe
To Iuſtice, and againſt her ſtill doth fight,
Working to all, that loue her, deadly woe,
And making all her Knights and people to doe fo.

Which my liege Lady ſeeing, thought it beſt,
With that his wife in friendly wife to deale,
For ſtint of ſtrife, and ſtabliſhment of reſt
Both to her felfe, and to her common weale,
And all forepaſt diſpleaſures to repeale. 190
So me in meſſage vnto her ſhe ſent,
To treat with her by way of enterdeale,
Of finall peace and faire attonement,
Which might concluded be by mutuall conſent.

All times haue wont ſafe paſſage to afford
To meſſengers, that come for cauſes iuſt :

l. 180, (*through . . . might*).

But this proude Dame disdayning all accord,
 Not onely into bitter termes forth brust,
 Reuiling me, and rayling as she lust,
 But lastly to make prooue of vtmost shame, 200
 Me like a dog she out of doores did thrust,
 Miscalling me by many a bitter name,
 That neuer did her ill, ne once deserued blame.

And lastly, that no shame might wanting be,
 When I was gone, soone after me she sent
 These two false Knights, whom there ye lying fee,
 To be by them dishonoured and shent :
 But thank't be God, and your good hardiment,
 They haue the price of their owne folly payd.
 So said this Damzell, that hight *Samient*, 210
 And to those knights, for their so noble ayd,
 Her selfe most gratefull shew'd, & heaped thanks repayd./

But they now hauing throughly heard, and seene
 Al those great wrongs, the which that mayd complai-
 To haue bene done against her Lady Queene, (ned.
 By that proud dame, which her so much disdained,
 Were moued much thereat, and twixt them fained,
 With all their force to worke auengement strong
 Vppon the Souldan selfe, which it mayntained,
 And on his Lady, th'author of that wrong, 220
 And vppon all those Knights, that did to her belong.

But thinking best by counterfet disguise
 To their deseigne to make the easier way,
 They did this complot twixt them selues deuise,
 First that sir *Artegall* should him array,
 Like one of those two Knights, which dead there lay.

And then that Damzell, the sad *Samient*,
Should as his purchast prize with him conuay
Vnto the Souldans court, her to present
Vnto his scornfull Lady, that for her had sent. 230

So as they had deuiz'd, fir *Artegall*
Him clad in th'armour of a Pagan knight,
And taking with him, as his vanquisht thrall,
That Damzell, led her to the Souldans right.
Where soone as his proud wife of her had fight,
Forth of her window as she looking lay,
She weened streight, it was her Paynim Knight,
Which brought that Damzell, as his purchast pray ;
And sent to him a Page, that mote direct his way.

Who bringing them to their appointed place, 240
Offred his seruice to disarme the Knight ;
But he refusing him to let vnlace,
For doubt to be discouered by his fight,
Kept / himselfe still in his straunge armour dight.
Soone after whom the Prince arriued there,
And sending to the Souldan in despight
A bold defyance, did of him requere
That Damzell, whom he held as wrongfull prisionere.

Wherewith the Souldan all with furie fraught,
Swearing, and banning most blasphemously, 250
Commaunded straight his armour to be brought,
And mounting straight vpon a charret hye,
With yron wheelles and hookes arm'd dreadfully,
And drawne of cruell steedes, which he had fed
With flesh of men, whom through fell tyranny

He slaughtred had, and ere they were halfe ded,
Their bodies to his beafts for prouender did fped.

So forth he came all in a cote of plate,
Burnisht with bloudie rust ; whiles on the greene
The Briton Prince him readie did awayte, 260
In glistering armes right goodly well befeene,
That shone as bright, as doth the heauen sheene ;
And by his stirrup *Talus* did attend,
Playing his pages part, as he had beene
Before directed by his Lord ; to th'end
He should his fale to finall execution bend.

Thus goe they both together to their geare,
With like fierce minds, but meanings different :
For the proud Souldan with presumptuous cheare,
And countenance sublime and insolent, 270
Sought onely slaughter and auengement :
But the braue Prince for honour and for right,
Gainst tortious powre and lawlesse regiment,
In the behalfe of wronged weake did fight :
More in his causes truth he trusted then in might. /

Like to the *Thracian* Tyrant, who they say
Vnto his horses gaue his guefts for meat,
Till he himselfe was made their greedie pray,
And torne in peeces by *Alcides* great.
So thought the Souldan in his follies threat, 280
Either the Prince in peeces to haue torne
With his sharpe wheelles, in his first rages heat,
Or vnder his fierce horses feet haue borne
And trampled downe in dust his thoughts disdained scorne.

But the bold child that perill well espying,
If he too rashly to his charet drew,
Gauē way vnto his horsēs speedie flying,
And their resistlesse rigour did eschew.
Yet as he passed by, the Pagan threw
A shiuering dart with so impetuous force, 290
That had he not it shun'd with heedfull vew,
It had himselfe transfixe, or his horse,
Or made them both one masse withouten more remorse.

Oft drew the Prince vnto his charret nigh,
In hope some stroke to fasten on him neare ;
But he was mounted in his seat so high,
And his wingfooted courfers him did beare
So fast away, that ere his readie speare
He could aduance, he farre was gone and past.
Yet still he him did follow euerywhere, 300
And followed was of him likewise full fast ;
So long as in his steedes the flaming breath did last.

Againe the Pagan threw another dart,
Of which he had with him abundant store,
On euery side of his embatteld cart,
And of all other weapons lesse or more,
Which / warlike vses had deuiz'd of yore.
The wicked shaft guyded through th'ayrie wyde,
By some bad spirit, that it to mischief bore, 310
Stayd not, till through his curat it did glyde,
And made a griesly wound in his enriuen side.

Much was he griued with that haplesse throe,
That opened had the welspring of his blood ;

But much the more that to his hatefull foe
 He mote not come, to wreake his wrathfull mood.
 That made him raue, like to a Lyon wood,
 Which being wounded of the huntsmans hand
 Can not come neare him in the couert wood,
 Where he with boughes hath built his shady stand,
 And senst himselfe about with many a flaming brand.

Still when he fought t'approch vnto him ny, 321
 His charret wheeles about him whirled round
 And made him backe againe as fast to fly ;
 And eke his steedes like to an hungry hound,
 That hunting after game hath carrion found,
 So cruelly did him purfew and chace,
 That his good steed, all were he much renound
 For noble courage, and for hardie race,
 Durst not endure their fight, but fled from place to place.

Thus long they traft, and trauerst to and fro, 330
 Seeking by euery way to make some breach,
 Yet could the Prince not nigh vnto him goe,
 That one sure stroke he might vnto him reach,
 Whereby his strengthes assay he might him teach.
 At last from his victorious shield he drew
 The vaile, which did his powrefull light empeach ;
 And comming full before his horses vew,
 As they vpon him preft, it plaine to them did shew. /

Like lightening flash, that hath the gazer burned,
 So did the sight thereof their sense dismay, 340
 That backe againe vpon themselues they turned,
 And with their ryder ranne perforce away :

Ne could the Souldan them from flying stay,
With raynes, or wonted rule, as well he knew.
Nought feared they, what he could do, or say,
But th'onely feare, that was before their vew ;
From which like mazed deare, difmayfully they flew.

Fast did they fly, as them their feete could beare,
High ouer hilles, and lowly ouer dales,
As they were follow'd of their former feare. 350
In vaine the Pagan bannes, and sweares, and rayles,
And backe with both his hands vnto him hayles
The refty raynes, regarded now no more :
He to them calles and speakes, yet nought auayles ;
They heare him not, they haue forgot his lore,
But go, which way they list, their guide they haue forlore.

As when the firie-mouthed steeds, which drew
The Sunnes bright wayne to *Phaetons* decay,
Soone as they did the monstrous Scorpion vew,
With vgly craples crawling in their way, 360
The dreadfull sight did them so fore affray,
That their well knowne courses they forwent,
And leading th'euer-burning lampe astray,
This lower world nigh all to ashes brent,
And left their scorched path yet in the firmament.

Such was the furie of these head-strong steeds,
Soone as the infants funlike shield they saw,
That all obedience both to words and deeds
They quite forgot, and scornd all former law ; 369
Through / woods, and rocks, and mountaines they did
The yron charet, and the wheelles did teare, (draw

l. 362, 'knownen' : l. 365,—not brought out as usual in '96.

And toft the Paynim, without feare or awe ;
 From fide to fide they toft him here and there,
 Crying to them in vaine, that nould his crying heare.

Yet ftill the Prince purfew'd him clofe behind,
 Oft making offer him to finite, but found
 No eafie meanes according to his mind.
 At laft they haue all ouerthrowne to ground
 Quite topfide turuey, and the pagan hound
 Amongft the yron hookes and graples keene, 380
 Torne all to rags, and rent with many a wound,
 That no whole peece of him was to be feene,
 But fcattered all about, and ftrow'd vpon the greene.

Like as the curfed sonne of *Thefeus*,
 That following his chace in dewy morne,
 To fly his stepdames loues outrageous,
 Of his owne fteedes was all to peeces torne,
 And his faire limbs left in the woods forlorne ;
 That for his fake *Diana* did lament,
 And all the wooddy Nymphes did wayle and mourne.
 So was this Souldan rapt and all to rent, 391
 That of his fhape appear'd no litle moniment.

Onely his fhield and armour, which there lay,
 Though nothing whole, but all to brufd and broken,
 He vp did take, and with him brought away,
 That mote remaine for an eternall token
 To all, mongft whom this ftorie fhould be fpoken,
 How worthily, by heauens high decree,
 Iuftice that day of wrong her felfe had wroken,

That all men which that spectacle did see,
By like ensample mote for euer warned bee. / 400

So on a tree, before the Tyrants dore,
He caused them be hung in all mens sight,
To be a moniment for euermore.
Which when his Ladie from the castles hight
Beheld, it much appald her troubled spright :
Yet not, as women wont in dolefull fit,
She was dismayd, or faynted through affright,
But gathered vnto her her troubled wit,
And gan eftsoones deuize to be aueng'd for it. 410

Streight downe she ranne, like an enraged cow,
That is berobbed of her youngling dere,
With knife in hand, and fatally did vow,
To wreake her on that mayden messengere,
Whom she had cauld be kept as prisonere,
By *Artegall*, misween'd for her owne Knight,
That brought her backe. And comming present there,
She at her ran with all her force and might,
All flaming with reuenge and furious despight.

Like raging *Ino*, when with knife in hand 420
She threw her husbands mured infant out,
Or fell *Medea*, when on *Colchicke* strand
Her brothers bones she scattered all about ;
Or as that madding mother, mongst the rout
Of *Bacchus* Priests her owne deare flesh did teare.
Yet neither *Ino*, nor *Medea* stout,
Nor all the *Mænades* so furious were,
As this bold woman, when she saw that Damzell there.

But *Artegall* being thereof aware,
 Did stay her cruell hand, ere she her raught, 430
 And as she did her selfe to strike prepare,
 Out of her fist the wicked weapon caught :
 With / that like one enfelon'd or distraught,
 She forth did come, whether her rage her bore,
 With franticke passion, and with furie fraught ;
 And breaking forth out at a posterne dore,
 Vnto the wyld wood ranne, her dolours to deplore.

As a mad bytch, when as the franticke fit
 Her burning tongue with rage inflamed hath,
 Doth runne at randon, and with furious bit 440
 Snatching at euery thing, doth wreake her wrath
 On man and beaſt, that commeth in her path.
 There they doe ſay, that ſhe transformed was
 Into a Tygre, and that Tygres ſcath
 In crueltie and outrage ſhe did paſſe,
 To proue her ſurname true, that ſhe impoſed haſe.

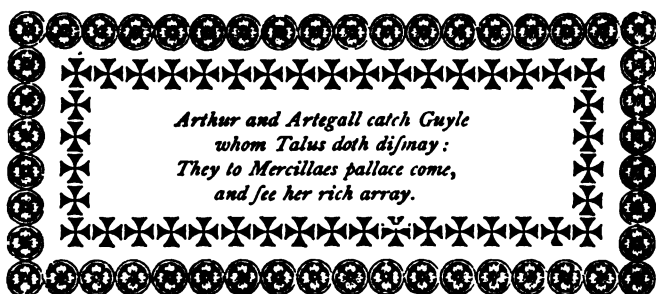
Then *Artegall* himſelfe diſcouering plaine,
 Did iſſue forth gainſt all that warlike rout
 Of knights and armed men, which did maintaine
 That Ladies part, and to the Souldan lout : 450
 All which he did aſſault with courage ſtout,
 All were they nigh an hundred knights of name :
 And like wyld Goates them chaced all about,
 Flying from place to place with cowheard ſhame,
 So that with finall force them all he ouercame.

Then cauſed he the gates be opened wyde,
 And there the Prince, as victour of that day,

l. 434, 'whither' : l. 438, 'bad' : l. 452, : for , of '96 : l. 454, 'coward.'

With tryumph entertayn'd and glorifyde,
 Presenting him with all the rich array,
 And roiall pompe, which there long hidden lay, 460
 Purchast through lawlesse powre and tortious wrong
 Of that proud Souldan, whom he earst did slay.
 So both for rest there hauing stayd not long,
 Marcht with that mayd, fit matter for another song. /

Cant. / IX.



VV Hat Tygre, or what other saluage wight
 Is so exceeding furious and fell,
 As Wrong, when it hath arm'd it selfe with might?
 Not fit mongst men, that doe with reason mell,
 But mongst wyld beafts and saluage woods to dwell;
 Where still the stronger doth the weake deuoure, 11
 And they that most in boldnesse doe excell,
 Are dreaded most, and feared for their powre:
 Fit for *Adicia*, there to build her wicked bowre.

l. 3. : for, —accepted : l. 8. W substituted for w.

There let her wonne farre from resort of men,
 Where righteous *Artegall* her late exyled ;
 There let her euer keepe her damned den,
 Where none may be with her lewd parts defyled,
 Nor none but beasts may be of her despoyled :
 And turne we to the noble Prince, where late 20
 We did him leaue, after that he had foyled
 The cruell Souldan, and with dreadfull hate
 Had vtterly subuerted his vnrighteous state.

Where hauing with Sir *Artegall* a space
 Well solast in that Souldans late delight,
 They both resoluing now to leaue the place,
 Both it and all the wealth therein behight
 Vnto / that Damzell in her Ladies right,
 And so would haue departed on their way.
 But she them woo'd by all the meanes she might, 30
 And earnestly befought, to wend that day
 With her, to see her Ladie thence not farre away.

By whose entreatie both they ouercommen,
 Agree to goe with her, and by the way,
 (As often falles) of fundry things did commen.
 Mongst which that Damzell did to them bewray
 A straunge aduenture, which not farre thence lay ;
 To weete a wicked villaine, bold and stout,
 Which wonned in a rocke not farre away,
 That robbed all the countrie there about, 40
 And brought the pillage home, whence none could get
 it out.

Thereto both his owne wylie wit, (she fayd)
 And eke the fastnesse of his dwelling place,

Both vnassaylable, gaue him great ayde :
 For he so crafty was to forge and face,
 So light of hand, and nymble of his pace,
 So smooth of tongue, and subtile in his tale.
 That could deceiue one looking in his face ;
 Therefore by name *Malengin* they him call,
 Well knownen by his feates, and famous ouer all. 50

Through these his flights he many doth confound,
 And eke the rocke, in which he wents to dwell,
 Is wondrous strong, and hewen farre vnder ground
 A dreadfull depth, how deepe no man can tell ;
 But some doe fay, it goeth downe to hell.
 And all within, it full of wyndings is,
 And hidden wayes, that scarfe an hound by smell
 Can follow out those false footsteps of his,
 Ne none can backe returne, that once are gone amis. /

Which when those knights had heard their harts gan
 To vnderstand that villeins dwelling place, (earne,
 And greatly it desir'd of her to learne, 62
 And by which way they towards it should trace.
 Were not (sayd she) that it should let your pace
 Towards my Ladies prefence by you ment,
 I would you guyde directly to the place.
 Then let not that (said they) stay your intent ;
 For neither will one foot, till we that carle haue hent.

So forth they past, till they approched ny
 Vnto the rocke, where was the villains won : 70
 Which when the Dānzell neare at hand did spy,
 She warn'd the knights thereof : who thereupon

Gan to aduize, what best were to be done.
 So both agreed, to send that mayd afore,
 Where she might sit nigh to the den alone,
 Wayling, and rayfing pittifull vprore,
 As if she did some great calamitie deplore.

With noyse whereof when as the caytiue carle
 Should issue forth, in hope to find some spoyle,
 They in awayt would closely him ensnarle, 80
 Ere to his den he backward could recoyle,
 And so would hope him easily to foyle.
 The Damzell straight went, as she was directed,
 Vnto the rocke, and there vpon the foyle
 Hauing her selfe in wretched wize abiected,
 Gan weepe and wayle, as if great griefe had her affected.

The cry whereof entring the hollow caue,
 Eftfoones brought forth the villaine, as they ment,
 With hope of her some wishfull boot to haue.
 Full dreadfull wight he was, as euer went 90
 Vpon / the earth, with hollow eyes deepe pent,
 And long curld locks, that downe his shoulders shag-
 And on his backe an vncouth vestiment (ged,
 Made of straunge stufte, but all to worne and ragged,
 And vnderneath his breech was all to torne and iagged.

And in his hand an huge long staffe he held,
 Whose top was arm'd with many an yron hooke,
 Fit to catch hold of all that he could weld,
 Or in the compasse of his clouches tooke ;
 And euer round about he cast his looke. 100
 Als at his backe a great wyde net he bore,
 With which he feldome fished at the brooke,

But vfd to fifh for fooles on the dry fhore,
Of which he in faire weather wont to take great ftore.

Him when the damzell faw faft by her fide,
So vgly creature, fhe was nigh difmayd,
And now for helpe aloud in earneft cride.
But when the villaine faw her fo affrayd,
He gan with guilefull words her to perfwade,
To banifh feare, and with *Sardonian* fmyle 110
Laughing on her, his falfe intent to fhade,
Gan forth to lay his bayte her to beguyle,
That from her felf vnwares he might her ftiale the whyle.

Like as the fouler on his guilefull pype
Charmes to the birds full many a pleafant lay,
That they the whiles may take leffe heedie keepe,
How he his nets doth for their ruine lay :
So did the villaine to her prate and play,
And many pleafant trickes before her fhew,
To turne her eyes from his intent away : 120
For he in flights and iugling feates did flow,
And of legier demayne the myfteries did know. /

To which whileft fhe lent her intentiue mind,
He fuddenly his net vpon her threw,
That ouersprad her like a puffe of wind ;
And fnatching her foone vp, ere well fhe knew,
Ran with her faft away vnto his mew,
Crying for helpe aloud. But when as ny
He came vnto his caue, and there did vew
The armed knights ftopping his paffage by, 130
He threw his burden downe, and faft away did fly.

But *Artegall* him after did purfew,
 The whiles the Prince there kept the entrance still :
 Vp to the rocke he ran, and thereon flew
 Like a wyld Gote, leaping from hill to hill,
 And dauncing on the craggy cliffes at will ;
 That deadly daunger seem'd in all mens fight,
 To tempt such steps, where footing was so ill :
 Ne ought auayled for the armed knight,
 To thinke to follow him, that was so swift and light.

Which when he saw, his yron man he sent, 141
 To follow him ; for he was swift in chace.
 He him purfewed, where euer that he went,
 Both ouer rockes, and hilles, and euery place,
 Where so he fled, he followd him apace :
 So that he shortly forst him to forsake
 The hight, and downe descend vnto the base.
 There he him courst afresh, and soone did make
 To leaue his proper forme, and other shape to take.

Into a Foxe himfelfe he first did tourne ; 150
 But he him hunted like a Foxe full fast :
 Then to a bush himfelfe he did transforme,
 But he the bush did beat, till that at last
 Into / a bird it chaung'd, and from him past,
 Flying from tree to tree, from wand to wand :
 But he then stones at it so long did cast,
 That like a stone it fell vpon the land,
 But he then tooke it vp, and held fast in his hand.

So he it brought with him vnto the knights,
 And to his Lord Sir *Artegall* it lent, 160
 Warning him hold it fast, for feare of flights.

Who whilest in hand it gryping hard he hent,
 Into a Hedgehogge all vnwares it went,
 And prickt him so, that he away it threw.
 Then gan it runne away incontinent,
 Being returned to his former hew :
 But *Talus* soone him ouertooke, and backward drew.

But when as he would to a snake againe
 Hauē turn'd himselfe, he with his yron flayle
 Gan driue at him, with so huge might and maine,
 That all his bones, as small as sandy grayle 171
 He broke, and did his bowles difentrayle ;
 Crying in vaine for helpe, when helpe was past.
 So did deceipt the selfe deceiuer sayle,
 There they him left a carrion outcast ;
 For beafts and foules to feede vpon for their repast.

Thence forth they passed with that gentle Mayd,
 To see her Ladie, as they did agree.
 To which when she approched, thus she sayd ;
 Loe now, right noble knights, arriu'd ye bee 180
 Nigh to the place, which ye desir'd to see :
 There shall ye see my fouerayne Lady Queene
 Most sacred wight, most debonayre and free,
 That euer yet vpon this earth was seene,
 Or that with Diademe hath euer crowned beene. /

The gentle knights reioyced much to heare
 The prayfes of that Prince so manifold ;
 And passing litle further, commen were,
 Where they a stately pallace did behold,
 Of pompous show, much more then she had told ;

l. 162, '*hard*' for '*hart*' of '96—accepted : l. 186, '*knight*' (1611) :
 l. 187, ; for, —accepted.

With many towres, and tarras mounted hye, 191
 And all their tops bright glistering with gold,
 That seemed to out shine the dimmed skye,
 And with their brightnesse daz'd the straunge beholders
 eye.

There they alighting, by that Damzell were
 Directed in, and shewed all the sight :
 Whose porch, that most magnificke did appeare,
 Stood open wyde to all men day and night ;
 Yet warded well by one of mickle might,
 That fate thereby, with gyantlike resemblance, 200
 To keepe out guyle, and malice, and despight,
 That vnder shew oftymes of fayned semblance,
 Are wont in Princes courts to worke great scath and hin-
 drance.

His name was *Awe* ; by whom they passing in
 Went vp the hall, that was a large wyde roome,
 All full of people making troublous din,
 And wondrous noyse, as if that there were some,
 Which vnto them was dealing righteous doome.
 By whom they passing, through the thickest preasse,
 The marshall of the hall to them did come ; 210
 His name hight *Order*, who commaunding peace,
 Them guyded through the throng, that did their clamors
 ceasse.

They ceast their clamors vpon them to gaze ;
 Whom seeing all in armour bright as day,
 Straunge there to see, it did them much amaze,
 And with vnwonted terror halfe affray,

For / neuer saw they there the like array.
Ne euer was the name of warre there spoken,
But ioyous peace and quietnesse alway,
Dealing iust iudgements, that mote not be broken
For any brybes, or threatens of any to be wroken. 221

There as they entred at the Scriene, they saw
Some one, whose tongue was for his trespasse vyle
Nayld to a post, adiudged so by law:
For that therewith he falsely did reuyle,
And foule blaspheme that Queene for forged guyle,
Both with bold speeches, which he blazed had,
And with lewd poems, which he did compyle;
For the bold title of a Poet bad
He on himselfe had ta'en, and rayling rymes had sprad.

Thus there he stood, whylest high ouer his head, 231
There written was the purport of his sin,
In cyphers strange, that few could rightly read,
BON FONT: but *bon* that once had written bin,
Was raced out, and *Mal* was now put in.
So now *Malfont* was plainely to be red;
Eyther for th'euill, which he did therein,
Or that he likened was to a welhed
Of euill words, and wicked sclaunders by him shed.

They passing by, were guyded by degree 240
Vnto the prefence of that gracious Queene:
Who fate on high, that she might all men see,
And might of all men royally be secne:

L. 234, '*Font*' is misprinted '*Fons*' in '96 and 1609—curiously enough, Dr Morris seems to have been the first to correct the very obvious error:
L. 239, '*slanders*,' as before: L. 243, : substituted for ,.

Vpon a throne of gold full bright and sheene,
 Adorned all with gemmes of endlesse price,
 As either might for wealth haue gotten bene,
 Or could be fram'd by workmans rare deuice ;
 And all embost with Lyons and with Flourdelyce. /

All ouer her a cloth of state was spred,
 Not of rich tiffew, nor of cloth of gold, 250
 Nor of ought else, that may be richest red,
 But like a cloud, as likest may be told,
 That her brode spreading wings did wyde vnfold ;
 Whose skirts were bordred with bright sunny beams,
 Gliftring like gold, amongst the plights enrold,
 And here and there shooting forth siluer streames,
 Mongst which crept litle Angels through the glittering
 (gleames

Seemed those litle Angels did vphold
 The cloth of state, and on their purpled wings 259
 Did beare the pendants, through their nimbleffe bold :
 Besides a thousand more of such, as fings
 Hymnes to high God, and carols heauenly things,
 Encompassed the throne, on which she fate :
 She Angel-like, the heyre of ancient kings
 And mightie Conquerors, in royall state,
 Whylest kings and kefars at her feet did them prostrate.

Thus she did sit in fouerayne Maiestie,
 Holding a Scepter in her royall hand,
 The sacred pledge of peace and clemencie,
 With which high God had blest her happie land, 270
 Maugre so many foes, which did withstand.
 But at her feet her sword was likewise layde,
 Whose long rest rusted the bright steely brand ;

Yet when as foes enforst, or friends fought ayde,
She could it sternely draw, that all the world dismayde.

And round about, before her feet there fate
A beuie of faire Virgins clad in white,
That goodly seem'd t'adorne her royall state,
All louely daughters of high *Ioue*, that hight,
Litæ / by him begot in lous delight, 280
Vpon the righteous *Themis* : those they say
Vpon *Ioues* iudgement feat wayt day and night,
And when in wrath he threats the worlds decay,
They doe his anger calme, and cruell vengeance stay.

They also doe by his diuine permissiõ
Vpon the thrones of mortall Princes tend,
And often treat for pardon and remission
To supliants, through frayltie which offend
Those did vpon *Mercillaes* throne attend :
Iust *Dice*, wise *Eunomie*, myld *Eirene*, 290
And them amongst, her glorie to commend,
Sate goodly *Temperance* in garments clene,
And sacred *Reuerence*, yborne of heauenly strene,

Thus did she sit in royall rich estate,
Admyr'd of many, honoured of all,
Whylest vnderneath her feete, there as she fate,
An huge great Lyon lay, that mote appall
An hardie courage, like captiued thrall,
With a strong yron chaine and coller bound,
That once he could not moue, nor quich at all; 300
Yet did he murmure with rebellious found,
And softly royne, when saluage choler gan redound.

1. 301, 'rebellious'—accepted for 'rebellions.'

So fitting high in dreaded fouerayntie, (brought;
 Those two strange knights were to her preſence
 Who bowing low before her Maieſtie,
 Did to her myld obeyſance, as they ought,
 And meekeſt boone, that they imagine mought.
 To whom ſhe eke inclyning her withall,
 As a faire ſtoupe of her high ſoaring thought,
 A chearefull countenance on them let fall, 310
 Yet tempred with ſome maieſtie imperiall. /

As the bright ſunne, what time his fierie teme
 Towards the weſterne brim begins to draw,
 Gins to abate the brightneſſe of his beme,
 And feruour of his flames ſomewhat adaw :
 So did this mightie Ladie, when ſhe ſaw
 Thoſe two ſtrange knights ſuch homage to her make,
 Bate ſomewhat of that Maieſtie and awe,
 That whylome wont to doe ſo many quake,
 And with more myld aſpect thoſe two to entertake. 320

Now at that inſtant, as occaſion fell,
 When theſe two ſtranger knights arriu'd in place,
 She was about affaires of common wele,
 Dealing of Iuſtice with indifferent grace,
 And hearing pleas of people meane and baſe.
 Mongſt which as then, there was for to be heard
 The tryall of a great and weightie caſe,
 Which on both ſides was then debating hard :
 But at the ſight of theſe, thoſe were a while debard.

But after all her princely entertayne, 330
 To th'hearing of that former cauſe in hand,

Her felfe eftfoones ſhe gan conuert againe ;
 Which that thoſe knights likewiſe mote vnderſtand,
 And witneſſe forth aright in forrain land,
 Taking them vp vnto her ſtately throne,
 Where they mote heare the matter throughly ſcand
 On either part, ſhe placed th'one on th'one,
 The other on the other ſide, and neare them none.

Then was there brought, as priſoner to the barre,
 A Ladie of great countenance and place, 340
 But that ſhe it with foule abuſe did marre ;
 Yet did appeare rare beautie in her face,
 But / blotted with condition vile and baſe,
 That all her other honour did obſcure,
 And titles of nobilitie deface :
 Yet in that wretched ſemblant, ſhe did ſure
 The peoples great compaſſion vnto her allure.

Then vp aroſe a perſon of deepe reach,
 And rare in-fight, hard matters to reuele ;
 That well could charme his tongue, & time his ſpeech
 To all aſſayes : his name was called *Zele* : 351
 He gan that Ladie ſtrongly to appele
 Of many haynous crymes, by her enured,
 And with ſharpe reaſons rang her ſuch a pele,
 That thoſe, whom ſhe to pitie had allured,
 He now t'abhorre and loath her perſon had procured.

Fiſt gan he tell, how this that ſeem'd ſo faire
 And royally arayd, *Dueſſa* hight,
 That falſe *Dueſſa*, which had wrought great care,
 And mickle miſchiefe vnto many a knight, 360

l. 358, , after *hight*—accepted.

By her beguyled, and confounded quight :
 But not for those she now in question came,
 Though also those mote question'd be aright,
 But for vyld treasons, and outrageous shame,
 Which she against the dred *Mercilla* oft did frame.

For she whylome (as ye mote yet right well
 Remember) had her counsels false conspyred,
 With faithlesse *Blandamour* and *Paridell*,
 (Both two her paramours, both by her hyred,
 And both with hope of shadowes vaine inspyred.)
 And with them practiz'd, how for to depryue 371
Mercilla of her crowne, by her aspyred,
 That she might it vnto her selfe deryue,
 And triumph in their blood, whō she to death did dryue./

But through high heauens grace, which fauour not
 The wicked driftes of trayterous defynes,
 Gainst loiall Princes, all this curfed plot,
 Ere prooffe it tooke, discouered was betymes,
 And th'aſtours won the meede meet for their crymes.
 Such be the meede of all, that by such mene 380
 Vnto the type of kingdomes title clymes.
 But false *Dueſſa* now vntitled Queene,
 Was brought to her sad doome, as here was to be seene.

Strongly did *Zele* her haynous fact enforce,
 And many other crimes of foule defame
 Against her brought to banish all remorse,
 And aggrauate the horror of her blame.
 And with him to make part against her, came

ll. 375-7, (which . . . Princes).

Many graue persons, that against her pled ;
 First was a sage old Syre, that had to name 390
 The *Kingdomes care*, with a white siluer hed,
 That many high regards and reasons gainst her red.

Then gan *Authority* her to appose
 With peremptorie powre, that made all mute ;
 And then the law of *Nations* gainst her rose,
 And reasons brought, that no man could refute ;
 Next gan *Religion* gainst her to impute
 High Gods behest, and powre of holy lawes ;
 Then gan the Peoples cry and Commons sute,
 Importune care of their owne publicke cause ; 400
 And lastly *Iustice* charged her with breach of lawes.

But then for her, on the contrarie part,
 Rose many aduocates for her to plead :
 First there came *Pittie*, with full tender hart,
 And with her ioyn'd *Regard* of womanhead ;
 And / then came *Daunger* threatning hidden dread,
 And high alliance vnto forren powre ;
 Then came *Nobilitie* of birth, that bread
 Great ruth through her misfortunes tragicke stowre ;
 And lastly *Griefe* did plead, & many teares forth powre.

With the neare touch whereof in tender hart 411
 The Briton Prince was fore empaffionate,
 And woxe inclined much vnto her part,
 Through the sad terror of so dreadfull fate,
 And wretched ruine of so high estate ;
 That for great ruth his courage gan relent.
 Which when as *Zele* perceiued to abate,

l. 393, '*oppoſe*': ll. 408, 410, italics,—accepted: l. 415, ; for,—accepted.

He gan his earnest feruour to augment,
And many fearefull obiects to them to present.

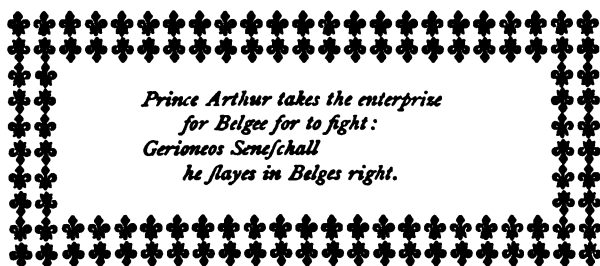
He gan t'efforce the euidence anew, 420
And new accuséments to produce in place :
He brought forth that old hag of hellish hew,
The curst *Ate*, brought her face to face,
Who priuie was, and partie in the case :
She, glad of spoyle and ruinous decay,
Did her appeach, and to her more disgrace,
The plot of all her practise did display,
And all her traynes, and all her treasons forth did lay.

Then brought he forth, with grievly grim aspect,
Abhorred *Murder*, who with bloudie knyfe 440
Yet dropping fresh in hand did her detect,
And there with guiltie bloudshed charged ryfe :
Then brought he forth *Sedition*, breeding stryfe
In troublous wits, and mutinous vprore :
Then brought he forth *Incontinence* of lyfe,
Euen foule *Adulterie* her face before,
And lewd *Impietie*, that her accused fore. /

All which when as the Prince had heard and seene,
His former fancies ruth he gan repent,
And from her partie estfoones was drawen cleene.
But *Artegall* with constant firme intent, 451
For zeale of Iustice was against her bent.
So was she guiltie deemed of them all.
Then *Zeale* began to vrge her punishment,
And to their Queene for iudgement loudly call,
Vnto *Mercilla* myld for Iustice gainst the thrall.

But she, whose Princely breast was touched nere
 With piteous ruth of her so wretched plight,
 Though plaine she saw by all, that she did heare,
 That she of death was guiltie found by right, 460
 Yet would not let iust vengeance on her light ;
 But rather let in stead thereof to fall
 Few perling drops from her faire lampes of light ;
 The which she couering with her purple pall
 Would haue the passion hid, and vp arofe withall.

Cant. / X.



SOME Clarkes doe doubt in their deuicefull art,
 Whether this heauenly thing, whereof I treat,
 To weeten *Mercie*, be of Iustice part,
 Or drawne forth from her by diuine extreate.
 This well I wote, that sure she is as great, 10
 And meriteth to haue as high a place,
 Sith in th'Almighties euerlasting feat

l. 3, : for ,—accepted : l. 8, , after '*Mercie*'—accepted.

She first was bred and borne of heavenly race ;
 From thence pour'd down on men, by influence of grace.

For if that Vertue be of so great might,
 Which from iust verdict will for nothing start,
 But to preferue inuiolated right,
 O't spiles the principall, to saue the part ;
 So much more then is that of powre and art,
 That seekes to saue the subiect of her skill, 20
 Yet neuer doth from doome of right depart :
 As it is greater prayse to saue, then spill,
 And better to reforme, then to cut off the ill.

Who then can thee, *Mercilla*, throughly prayse,
 That herein doest all earthly Princes pas ?
 What heavenly Muse shall thy great honour rayse
 Vp to the skies, whence first deriu'd it was, /
 And now on earth it selfe enlarged has,
 From th'vtmost brinke of the *Armericke* shore,
 Vnto the margent of the *Molucas* ? 30
 Those Nations farre thy iustice doe adore :
 But thine owne people do thy mercy prayse much more.

Much more it prayfed was of those two knights ;
 The noble Prince, and righteous *Artegall*,
 When they had seene and heard her doome a rights
 Against *Duessá*, damned by them all ;
 But by her tempred without grieve or gall,
 Till strong constraint did her thereto enforce.
 And yet euen then ruing her wilfull fall,

With more then needfull naturall remorse, 40
And yeelding the last honour to her wretched corse.

During all which, those knights continu'd there,
Both doing and receiuing curtesies,
Of that great Ladie, who with goodly chere
Them entertayn'd, fit for their dignities,
Approuing dayly to their noble eyes
Royall examples of her mercies rare,
And worthie paterns of her clemencies ;
Which till this day mongst many liuing are,
Who them to their posterities doe still declare. 50

Amongst the rest, which in that space befell,
There came two Springals of full tender yeares,
Farre thence from forrein land, where they did dwell,
To seeke for succour of her and her Peares
With humble prayers and intreatfull teares ;
Sent by their mother, who a widow was,
Wrapt in great dolours and in deadly feares,
By a strong Tyrant, who inuaded has
Her land, and flaine her children ruefully alas.

Her / name was *Belga*, who in former age 60
A Ladie of great worth and wealth had beene,
And mother of a frutefull heritage,
Euen seuateene goodly sonnes ; which who had seene
In their first flowre, before this fatall teene
Them ouertooke, and their faire blossomes blasted,
More happie mother would her surely weene,

L. 54, second 'of' superfluously inserted in '96 before the second 'her.'

Then famous *Niobe*, before she tasted
Latonaes childrens wrath, that all her issue wasted.

But this fell Tyrant, through his tortious powre,
 Had left her now but five of all that brood : 70
 For twelue of them he did by times deuoure,
 And to his Idols sacrifice their blood,
 Whyleft he of none was stopped, nor withstood.
 For soothly he was one of matchlesse might,
 Of horrible aspect, and dreadfull mood,
 And had three bodies in one waft empight,
 And th'armes and legs of three, to succour him in
 fight.

And sooth they say, that he was borne and bred
 Of Gyants race, the sonne of *Geryon*,
 He that whylome in Spaine so fore was dred, 80
 For his huge powre and great oppression,
 Which brought that land to his subiection,
 Through his three bodies powre, in one combynd ;
 And eke all strangers in that region
 Arryuing, to his kyne for food assynd ;
 The fayrest kyne aliue, but of the fiercest kynd.

For they were all, they say, of purple hew,
 Kept by a cowheard, hight *Eurytion*,
 A cruell carle, the which all strangers slew,
 Ne day nor night did sleepe, t'attend them on, / 90
 But walkt about them euer and anone,
 With his two headed dogge, that *Orthrus* hight ;
Orthrus begotten by great *Typhaon*,

l. 72, 'Idol' (Church) : l. 78, 'brad,' and l. 80, 'dred.'

And foule *Echidna*, in the house of night ;
But *Hercules* them all did ouercome in fight.

His sonne was this, *Geryoneo* hight,
Who after that his monstrous father fell
Vnder *Alcides* club, streight tooke his flight
From that sad land, where he his syre did quell,
And came to this, where *Belge* then did dwell, 100
And flourish in all wealth and happinesse,
Being then new made widow (as befell)
After her Noble husbands late decesse ;
Which gaue beginning to her woe and wretchednesse.

Then this bold Tyrant, of her widowhed
Taking aduantage, and her yet fresh woes,
Himselfe and seruice to her offered,
Her to defend against all forrein foes,
That should their powre against her right oppose.
Whereof she glad, now needing strong defence, 110
Him entertayn'd, and did her champion chose :
Which long he vfd with carefull diligence,
The better to confirme her fearelesse confidence.

By meanes whereof, she did at last commit
All to his hands, and gaue him soueraine powre
To doe, what euer he thought good or fit.
Which hauing got, he gan forth from that howre
To stirre vp strife, and many a Tragicke stowre,
Giuing her dearest children one by one
Vnto a dreadfull Monster to deuoure, 120
And setting vp an Idole of his owne,
The image of his monstrous parent *Geryone*.

So / tyrannizing, and oppressing all,
The woefull widow had no meanes now left,
But vnto gracious great *Mercilla* call
For ayde, against that cruell Tyrants theft,
Ere all her children he from her had reft.
Therefore these two, her eldest sonnes she sent,
To seeke for succour of this Ladies giest :
To whom their fute they humbly did present, 130
In th'hearing of full many Knights and Ladies gent.

Amongst the which then fortun'd to bee
The noble Briton Prince, with his braue Peare ;
Who when he none of all those knights did see
Hastily bent, that enterprife to heare,
Nor vndertake the same, for cowheard feare,
He stepped forth with courage bold and great,
Admyr'd of all the rest in prefence there,
And humbly gan that mightie Queene entreat,
To graunt him that aduenture for his former feat. 140

She, gladly graunted it : then he straight way
Himselfe vnto his iourney gan prepare,
And all his armours readie dight that day,
That nought the morrow next mote stay his fare.
The morrow next appear'd, with purple hayre
Yet dropping fresh out of the *Indian* fount,
And bringing light into the heauens fayre,
When he was readie to his steede to mount ;
Vnto his way, which now was all his care and count.

Then taking humble leaue of that great Queene, 150
Who gaue him roiall giftes and riches rare,

l. 136, 'coward,' as before.

As tokens of her thankefull mind befeene,
And leauing *Artegall* to his owne care ; /
Vpon his voyage forth he gan to fare,
With those two gentle youthes, which him did guide,
And all his way before him still prepare.
Ne after him did *Artigall* abide,
But on his first aduenture forward forth did ride.

It was not long, till that the Prince arriued
Within the land, where dwelt that Ladie sad, 160
Whereof that Tyrant had her now depriued,
And into moores and marshes banisht had,
Out of the pleafant foyle, and citties glad,
In which she wont to harbour happily :
But now his cruelty so fore she drad,
That to those fennes for fastnesse she did fly,
And there her selfe did hyde from his hard tyranny.

There he her found in sorrow and difmay,
All folitarie without liuing wight ;
For all her other children, through affray, 170
Had hid themfelues, or taken further flight :
And eke her selfe through suddenn strange affright,
When one in armes she saw, began to fly ;
But when her owne two fonnes she had in fight,
She gan take hart, and looke vp ioyfully :
For well she wist this knight came, succour to supply.

And running vnto them with greedy ioyes,
Fell straight about their neckes, as they did kneele,
Aud burfting forth in teares ; Ah my sweet boyes,
(Sayd she) yet now I gin new life to feele, 180

And feeble spirits, that gan faint and reele,
 Now rife againe, at this your ioyous fight.
 Alreadie seemes that fortunes headlong wheele
 Begins to turne, and funne to shine more bright,
 Then it was wont, through comfort of this noble
 knight.

Then / turning vnto him : And you Sir knight
 (Said she) that taken haue this toylefome paine
 For wretched woman, miserable wight,
 May you in heauen immortall guerdon gaine
 For so great trauell, as you doe sustaine : 190
 For other meede may hope for none of mee,
 To whom nought else, but bare life doth remaine,
 And that so wretched one, as ye do see
 Is liker lingring death, then loathed life to bee.

Much was he moued with her piteous plight,
 And low dismounting from his loftie steede,
 Gan to recomfort her all that he might,
 Seeking to driue away deepe rooted dreede,
 With hope of helpe in that her greateft neede.
 So thence he wished her with him to wend, 200
 Vnto some place, where they mote rest and feede,
 And she take comfort, which God now did fend :
 Good hart in euils doth the euils much amend.

Ay me (fayd she) and whether shall I goe ?
 Are not all places full of forraine powres ?
 My pallaces possessed of my foe,
 My cities sackt, and their sky-threatening towres

l. 204, 'whither' (1611): l. 207, 'threatning' (1611).

Raced, and made smooth fields now full of flowres ?
Onely these marishes, and myrie bogs,
In which the fearefull ewftes do build their bowres,
Yeeld me an hostry mongst the croking frogs, 211
And harbour here in safety from those rauenous dogs.

Nathleffe (said he) deare Ladie with me goe,
Some place shall vs receiue, and harbour yield ;
If not, we will it force, maugre your foe,
And purchase it to vs with speare and shield : /
And if all sayle, yet farewell open field :
The earth to all her creatures lodging lends.
With such his chearefull speeches he doth wield
Her mind so well, that to his will she bends 220
And bynding vp her locks and weeds, forth with him
wends.

They came vnto a Citie farre vp land,
The which whylome that Ladies owne had bene ;
But now by force extort out of her hand,
By her strong foe, who had defaced cleene
Her stately towres, and buildings funny sheene ;
Shut vp her hauen, mard her marchants trade,
Robbed her people, that full rich had beene,
And in her necke a Castle huge had made,
The which did her cōmaund, without needing perfwade.

The Castle was the strength of all that state, 231
Vntill that state by strength was pulled downe,
And that same citie, so now ruinate,
Had bene the keye of all that kingdomes crowne ;

l. 233, 'now so' (Church).

Both goodly Castle, and both goodly Towne,
 Till that th'offended heauens lift to lowre
 Vpon their blisse, and balefull fortune frowne.
 When those gainst states and kingdomes do coniure,
 Who then can thinke their hedlong ruine to recure.

But he had brought it now in seruile bond, 240
 And made it beare the yoke of inquisition,
 Stryuing long time in vaine it to withstond;
 Yet glad at last to make most base submission,
 And life enioy for any composition.
 So now he hath new lawes and orders new
 Imposd on it, with many a hard condition,
 And forced it, the honour that is dew
 To God, to doe vnto his Idole most vntrew.

To / him he hath, before this Castle greene,
 Built a faire Chappell, and an Altar framed 250
 Of costly Iuory, full rich beseene,
 On which that curfed Idole farre proclaimed,
 He hath set vp, and him his God hath named;
 Offring to him in sinfull sacrifice
 The flesh of men, to Gods owne likenesse framed,
 And powring forth their bloud in brutishe wize,
 That any yron eyes, to see it would agrize.

And for more horror and more crueltie,
 Vnder that curfed Idols altar stone;
 An hideous monster doth in darknesse lie, 260
 Whose dreadfull shape was neuer secne of none

That liues on earth ; but vnto those alone
The which vnto him sacrificed bee.
Those he deuoures, they say, both flesh and bone :
What else they haue, is all the Tyrants see :
So that no whit of them remayning one may see.

There eke he placed a strong garrifone,
And set a Seneschall of dreaded might,
That by his powre oppressed euery one,
And vanquished all ventrous knights in fight; 270
To whom he wont shew all the shame he might,
After that them in battell he had wonne.
To which when now they gan approach in fight,
The Ladie counfeld him the place to shonne,
Whereas so many knights had foully bene fordonne.

Her fearefull speaches nought he did regard,
But ryding streight vnder the Castle wall,
Called aloud vnto the watchfull ward,
Which there did wayte, willing them forth to call /
Into the field their Tyrants Seneschall. 280
To whom when tydings thereof came, he streight
Calls for his armes, and arming him withall,
Eftsoones forth pricked proudly in his might,
And gan with courage fierce addresse him to the fight.

They both encounter in the middle plaine,
And their sharpe speares doe both together smite
Amid their shields, with so huge might and maine,
That seem'd their foules they wold haue ryuen quight
Out of their breasts, with furious despight.
Yet could the Seneschals no entrance find 290
Into the Princes shield, where it empight ;

So pure the mettall was, and well refynd,
But shiuered all about, and scattered in the wynd.

Not fo the Princes, but with restlesse force,
Into his shield it readie passage found,
Both through his haberieon, and eke his corse :
Which tombling downe vpon the senselesse ground,
Gauē leaue vnto his ghost from thraldome bound,
To wander in the griesly shades of night.
There did the Prince him leaue in deadly swound,
And thence vnto the castle marched right, 301
To see if entrance there as yet obtaine he might.

But as he nigher drew, three knights he spyde,
All arm'd to point, issuing forth a pace,
Which towards him with all their powre did ryde ;
And meeting him right in the middle race,
Did all their speares attonce on him enchace.
As three great Culuerings for battrie bent,
And leueld all against one certaine place,
Doe all attonce their thunders rage forth rent, 310
That makes the wals to stagger with astonishment:

So / all attonce they on the Prince did thonder ;
Who from his saddle swarued nought asyde,
Ne to their force gaue way, that was great wonder,
But like a bulwarke, firmly did abyde ;
Rebutting him, which in the midst did ryde,
With so huge rigour, that his mortall speare
Past through his shield, & pierst through either syde,

l. 305, ; for ,—accepted : l. 311, : for .—accepted : l. 315, ; for ,—accepted.

That downe he fell vppon his mother deare,
And powred forth his wretched life in deadly dreare.

Whom when his other fellowes saw, they fled 321
As fast as feete could carry them away ;
And after them the Prince as swiftly sped,
To be aueng'd of their vnknighly play.
There whilest they entring, th'one did th'other stay,
The hindmost in the gate he ouerhent,
And as he pressed in, him there did slay :
His carkasse tumbling on the threshold, sent
His groning soule vnto her place of punishment.

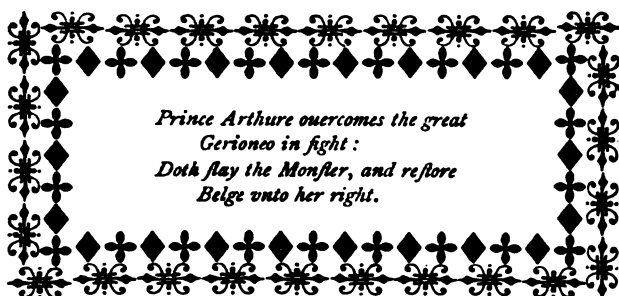
The other which was entred, laboured fast 330
To sperre the gate ; but that same lumpe of clay,
Whose grudging ghost was thereout fled and past ;
Right in the middest of the threshold lay,
That it the Posterne did from closing stay :
The whiles the Prince hard preased in betweene,
And entraunce wonne. Streight th'other fled away,
And ran into the Hall, where he did weene
Him selfe to saue : but he there slew him at the
skreene.

Then all the rest which in that Castle were,
Seeing that sad ensample them before, 340
Durst not abide, but fled away for feare,
And them conuayd out at a Posterne dore. /
Long fought the Prince, but when he found no more
T'oppose against his powre, he forth issued
Vnto that Lady, where he her had lore,

And her gan cheare, with what she there had vewed,
And what she had not secne, within vnto her shewed.

Who with right humble thanks him goodly greeting,
For so great prowesse, as he there had proued,
Much greater then was euer in her weeting, 350
With great admiraunce inwardly was moued,
And honourd him, with all that her behoued.
Thenceforth into that Castle he her led,
With her two sonnes, right deare of her beloued,
Where all that night them selues they cherished,
And from her balefull minde all care he banished.

Cant. XI.



IT often fals in course of common life,
 That right, long time is ouerborne of wrong,
 Through auarice, or powre, or guile, or strife,
 That weakens her, and makes her party strong :
 But Iustice, though her dome she doe prolong, 10
 Yet at the last she will her owne cause right.
 As by sad *Belge* seemes, whose wrongs though long
 She suffred, yet at length she did requight,
 And sent redresse thereof by this braue Briton Knight.

Whereof / when newes was to that Tyrant brought,
 How that the Lady *Belge* now had found
 A Champion, that had with his Champion fought,
 And laid his Seneschall low on the ground,
 And eke him selfe did threaten to confound,
 He gan to burne in rage, and friese in feare, 20
 Doubting sad end of principle vnfound :

l. 7, , after '*right*'—accepted.

Yet fith he heard but one, that did appeare,
He did him felfe encoufage, and take better cheare.

Natheleffe him felfe he armed all in haft,
And forth he far'd with all his many bad,
Ne stayd ftep, till that he came at laft
Vnto the Caftle, which they conquerd had.
There with huge terrour, to be more ydrad,
He sternely marcht before the Caftle gate,
And with bold vaunts, and ydle threatning bad 30
Deliuier him his owne, ere yet too late,
To which they had no right, nor any wrongfull ftate.

The Prince ftaid not his aunfwere to deuize,
But opening ftreight the Sparre, forth to him came,
Full nobly mounted in right warlike wize ;
And asked him, if that he were the fame,
Who all that wrong vnto that wofull Dame
So long had done, and from her natiue land
Exiled her, that all the world fpake shame.
He boldly aunfwerd him, he there did ftand 40
That would his doings iuftifie with his owne hand.

With that, fo furiously at him he flew,
As if he would haue ouerrun him ftreight,
And with his huge great yron axe gan hew
So hideoufly vppon his armour bright, /
As he to peeces would haue chopt it quight :
That the bold Prince was forced foote to giue
To his firft rage, and yeeld to his defpight ;

l. 42, , after '*that*'—accepted.

The whilest at him so dreadfully he driue,
That seem'd a marble rocke afunder could haue riue.

Thereto a great aduantage eke he has 51
Through his three double hands thrise multiplyde,
Besides the double strength, which in them was :
For stil when fit occasion did betyde,
He could his weapon shift from side to syde,
From hand to hand, and with such nimbleesse fly
Could wield about, that ere it were espide,
The wicked stroke did wound his enemy,
Behinde, beside, before, as he it list apply.

Which vncouth vse when as the Prince perceiued, 60
He gan to watch the wielding of his hand,
Least by such sight he were vnwares deceiued ;
And euer ere he saw the stroke to land,
He would it meete, and warily withstand.
One time, when he his weapon faynd to shift,
As he was wont, and chang'd from hand to hand,
He met him with a counterstroke so swift,
That quite smit off his arme, as he it vp did list.

Therewith, all fraught with fury and disdaine,
He brayd aloud for very fell despight ; 70
And sodainely t'auenge him selfe againe,
Gan into one assemble all the might
Of all his hands, and heaued them on hight,
Thinking to pay him with that one for all :
But the sad steele seizd not, where it was hight,
Vppon the childe, but somewhat short did fall,
And lighting on his horses head, him quite did mall.

l. 50, '*not riue*' : l. 70, ; for ,—accepted, and so l. 88.

Downe / streight to ground fell his astonisht steed,
 And eke to th'earth his burden with him bare :
 But he him selfe full lightly from him freed, 80
 And gan him selfe to fight on foote prepare.
 Whereof when as the Gyant was aware,
 He wox right blyth, as he had got thereby,
 And laught so loud, that all his teeth wide bare
 One might haue seene enraung'd disorderly,
 Like to a rancke of piles, that pitched are awry.

Eftsoones againe his axe he raught on hie,
 Ere he were throughly buckled to his geare ;
 And can let driue at him so dreadfullie,
 That had he chaunced not his shield to reare, 90
 Ere that huge stroke arriued on him neare,
 He had him surely clouen quite in twaine.
 But th'Adamantine shield, which he did beare,
 So well was tempred, that for all his maine,
 It would no passage yeeld vnto his purpose vaine.

Yet was the stroke so forcibly applide,
 That made him stagger with vncertaine sway,
 As if he would haue tottered to one side.
 Wherewith full wroth, he fiercely gan assay,
 That curt'sie with like kindnesse to repay ; 100
 And smote at him with so importune might,
 That two more of his armes did fall away,
 Like fruitlesse braunches, which the hatchets flight
 Hath pruned from the natiue tree, and cropped quight.

With that all mad and furious he grew,
 Like a fell mastiffe through enraging heat,

And curst, and band, and blasphemies forth threw,
Against his Gods, and fire to them did threat, /
And hell vnto him selfe with horreur great.
Thenceforth he car'd no more, which way he strooke,
Nor where it light, but gan to chaufe and sweat, 111
And gnasht his teeth, and his head at him shooke,
And sternely him beheld with grim and ghastly looke.

Nought fear'd the childe his lookes, ne yet his threats,
But onely wexed now the more aware,
To saue him selfe from those his furious heats,
And watch aduauntage, how to worke his care :
The which good Fortune to him offred faire.
For as he in his rage him ouerstrooke,
He ere he could his weapon backe repaire, 120
His side all bare and naked ouertooke,
And with his mortal steel quite through the body strooke.

Through all three bodies he him strooke attonce ;
That all the three attonce fell on the plaine :
Else should he thrife haue needed, for the nonce
Them to haue stricken, and thrife to haue slaine.
So now all three one sencelesse lumpe remaine,
Enwallow'd in his owne blacke bloody gore,
And byting th'earth for very deaths disdaine ;
Who with a cloud of night him couering, bore 130
Downe to the house of dole, his daies there to deplore.

Which when the Lady from the Castle saw,
Where she with her two sonnes did looking stand,
She towards him in hast her selfe did draw,
To greet him the good fortune of his hand :

l. 108, 'on' (1679) : l. 122, 'through.'

And all the people both of towne and land,
Which there stood gazing from the Citties wall
Vppon these warriours, greedy t'vnderstand,
To whether should the victory befall,
Now when they saw it false, they eke him greeted all.

But / *Belge* with her finnes prostrated low 141
Before his feete, in all that peoples sight ; (wo,
Mongst ioyes mixing some tears, mongst wele, some
Him thus bespake ; O most redoubted Knight.
The which hast me, of all most wretched wight,
That earst was dead, restor'd to life againe,
And these weake impes replanted by thy might ;
What guerdon can I giue thee for thy paine,
But euen that which thou sau'dst, thine still to remaine ?

He tooke her vp forby the lilly hand, 150
And her recomforted the best he might,
Saying ; Deare Lady, deedes ought not be scand
By th'authors manhood, nor the doers might,
But by their trueth and by the causes right :
That fame is it, which fought for you this day.
What other meed then need me to requight,
But that which yeeldeth vertues meed alway ?
That is the vertue selfe, which her reward doth pay.

She humbly thankt him for that wondrous grace,
And further sayd ; Ah Sir, but mote ye please, 160
Sith ye thus farre haue tendred my poore case,
As from my chiefeft foe me to release,
That your victorious arme will not yet cease,
Till ye haue rooted all the relickes out
Of that vilde race, and stablished my peace.

What is there else (fayd he) left of their rout ?
Declare it boldly Dame, and doe not stand in dout.

Then wote you, Sir, that in this Church hereby,
There stands an Idole of great note and name,
The which this Gyant reared first on hie, 170
And of his owne vaine fancies thought did frame : /
To whom for endlesse horror of his shame,
He offred vp for daily facrifice
My children and my people, burnt in flame ;
With all the tortures, that he could deuize,
The more t'aggrate his God with such his blouddy guize.

And vnderneath this Idoll there doth lie
An hideous monfter, that doth it defend,
And feedes on all the carkasses, that die
In facrifice vnto that curfed feend : 180
Whose vgly shape none euer saw, nor kend,
That euer scap'd : for of a man they say
It has the voice, that speaches forth doth fend,
Euen blasphemous words, which she doth bray
Out of her poyfnous entrails, fraught with dire decay.

Which when the Prince heard tell, his heart gan earne
For great desire, that Monfter to assay,
And prayd the place of her abode to learne.
Which being shew'd, he gan him selfe streight way
Thereto addresse, and his bright shield display. 190
So to the Church he came, where it was told,
The Monfter vnderneath the Altar lay ;

There he that Idoll saw of maffy gold
Most richly made, but there no Monster did behold.

Vpon the Image with his naked blade
Three times, as in defiance, there he strooke ;
And the third time out of an hidden shade,
There forth issfewd, from vnder th'Altars smooke,
A dreadfull feend, with fowle deformed looke,
That stretcht it selfe, as it had long lyen still ; 200
And her long taile and fethers strongly shooke,
That all the Temple did with terrour fill ;
Yet him nought terrifide, that feared nothing ill.

An / huge great Beast it was, when it in length
Was stretched forth, that nigh fild all the place,
And seem'd to be of infinite great strength ;
Horrible, hideous, and of hellish race,
Borne of the brooding of *Echidna* base,
Or other like infernall furies kinde :
For of a Mayd she had the outward face, 210
To hide the horror, which did lurke behinde,
The better to beguile, whom she so fond did finde.

Thereto the body of a dog she had,
Full of fell rauin and fierce greedinesse ;
A Lions clawes, with powre and rigour clad,
To rend and teare, what so she can oppresse ;
A Dragons taile, whose sting without redresse
Full deadly wounds, where so it is empight ;
And Eagles wings, for scope and speedinesse,
That nothing may escape her reaching might, 220
Whereto she euer list to make her hardy flight.

Much like in foulnesse and deformity
Vnto that Monster, whom the Theban Knight,
The father of that satall progeny,
Made kill her felfe for very hearts despight,
That he had red her Riddle, which no wight
Could euer loose, but suffred deadly doole.
So also did this Monster vse like flight
To many a one, which came vnto her schoole,
Whom she did put to death, deceiued like a foole. 230

She comming forth, when as the first beheld
The armed Prince, with shield so blazing bright,
Her ready to assaile, was greatly queld,
And much dismayd with that dismayfull fight, /
That backe she would have turnd for great affright.
But he gan her with courage fierce assay,
That forst her turne againe in her despight,
To faue her felfe, leaft that he did her slay :
And sure he had her slaine, had she not turnd her way.

Tho when she saw, that she was forst to fight, 240
She flew at him, like to an hellish feend,
And on his shield tooke hold with all her might,
As if that it she would in peeces rend,
Or reaued out of the hand, that did it hend.
Strongly he stroue out of her greedy gripe
To loose his shield, and long while did contend :
But when he could not quite it, with one stripe
Her Lions clawes he from her seete away did wipe.

With that aloude she gan to bray and yell,
And fowle blasphemous speeches forth did cast, 250

And bitter curfes, horrible to tell ;
 That euen the Temple, wherein ſhe was plaſt,
 Did quake to heare, and nigh afunder braſt.
 Tho with her huge long taile ſhe at him ſtrooke,
 That made him ſtagger, and ſtand halfe agaſt
 With trembling ioynts, as he for terrour ſhooke ;
 Who nought was terrifide, but greater courage tooke.

As when the Maſt of ſome well timbred hulke
 Is with the blaſt of ſome outragious ſtorme
 Blowne downe, it ſhakes the bottome of the bulke,
 And makes her ribs to cracke, as they were torne, 261
 Whileſt ſtill ſhe ſtands as ſtoniſht and forlorne ;
 So was he ſtound with ſtroke of her huge taile.
 But ere that it ſhe backe againe had borne,
 He with his ſword it ſtrooke, that without faile
 He ioynted it, and mard the ſwinging of her flaile.

Then / gan ſhe cry much louder then afore,
 That all the people there without it heard,
 And *Belge* ſelfe was therewith ſtonied fore,
 As if the onely ſound thereof ſhe feard. 270
 But then the ſeend her ſelfe more fiercely reard
 Vppon her wide great wings, and ſtrongly flew
 With all her body at his head and beard ;
 That had he not foreſeene with heedfull vew,
 And thrown his ſhield atween, ſhe had him done to rew.

But as ſhe preſt on him with heauy ſway,
 Vnder her wombe his fatall ſword he thruſt,

l. 251, ; for ,—accepted : l. 263, 'ſtonn'd' : l. 268 (*there without*) :
 l. 273, ; for ,—accepted.

And for her entrailes made an open way,
To issue forth ; the which once being bruft,
Like to a great Mill damb forth fiercely gusht, 280
And powred out of her infernall sinke
Most vgly filth, and poyson therewith rusht,
That him nigh choked with the deadly stinke :
Such loathly matter were small lust to speake, or thinke.

Then downe to ground fell that deformed Masse,
Breathing out clouds of sulphure fowle and blacke,
In which a puddle of contagion was,
More loathd then *Lerna*, or then *Stygian* lake,
That any man would nigh awshaped make.
Whom when he saw on ground, he was full glad, 290
And streight went forth his gladnesse to partake
With *Belge*, who watcht all this while full sad,
Wayting what end would be of that same daunger drad.

Whom when she saw so ioyously come forth,
She gan reioyce, and shew triumphant chere,
Lauding and praying his renowned worth,
By all the names that honorable were. /
Then in he brought her, and her shewed there
The present of his paines, that Monsters spoyle,
And eke that Idoll deem'd so costly dere ; 300
Whom he did all to peeces breake and foyle
In filthy durt, and left so in the loathely foyle.

Then all the people, which beheld that day,
Gan shout aloud, that vnto heauen it rong ;
And all the damzels of that towne in ray,
Came dauncing forth, and ioyous carrols song :

So him they led through all their streetes along,
 Crowned with girlonds of immortall baies,
 And all the vulgar did about them throng,
 To see the man, whose euerlasting praise 310
 They all were bound to all posterities to raise.

There he with *Belgæ* did a while remaine,
 Making great feast and ioyous merriment,
 Vntill he had her settled in her raine,
 With safe assuraunce and establisment.
 Then to his first emprise his mind he lent,
 Full loath to *Belgæ*, and to all the rest :
 Of whom yet taking leaue, thenceforth he went
 And to his former iourney him addest,
 On which long way he rode, ne euer day did rest. 320

But turne we now to noble *Artegall* ;
 Who hauing left *Mercilla*, streight way went
 On his first quest, the which him forth did call,
 To weete to worke *Irenæes* franchisement,
 And eke *Grantortoës* worthy punishment.
 So forth he fared as his manner was,
 With onely *Talus* wayting diligent,
 Through many perils, and much way did pas,
 Till nigh vnto the place at length approcht he has.

There / as he traueled by the way, he met 330
 An aged wight, wayfaring all alone,
 Who through his yeares long since aside had set
 The vse of armes, and battell quite forgone :
 To whom as he approcht, he knew anone,
 That it was he which whilome did attend
 On faire *Irene* in her affliction,

When first to Faery court he saw her wend,
Vnto his foueraine Queene her suite for to commend.

Whom by his name saluting, thus he gan ;
Haile good Sir *Sergis*, truest Knight aliue, 340
Well tride in all thy Ladies troubles than,
When her that Tyrant did of Crowne depriue ;
What new ocasion doth thee hither driue,
Whiles she alone is left, and thou here found ?
Or is she thrall, or doth she not suruiue ?
To whom he thus ; She liueth sure and found ;
But by that Tyrant is in wretched thraldome bound.

For she presuming on th'appointed tyde,
In which ye promist, as ye were a Knight,
To meete her at the saluage Ilands fyde, 350
And then and there for triall of her right
With her vnrigteous enemy to fight,
Did thither come, where she afraide of nought,
By guilefull treason and by subtill flight
Surprized was, and to *Grantorto* brought,
Who her imprifond hath, and her life often fought.

And now he hath to her prefixt a day,
By which if that no champion doe appeare,
Which will her cause in battailous array
Against him iustifie, and proue her cleare / 360
Of all those crimes, that he gainst her doth reare
She death shall sure aby. Those tidings sad
Did much abash Sir *Artigall* to heare,

ll. 350-1 within () : l. 353, (*affraid* . . . *nought*) : l. 362 — both '96 and 1609 read '*She death shall by*': text accepted from 1611.

And grieved fore, that through his fault she had
Fallen into that Tyrants hand and vſage bad.

Then thus replide ; Now ſure and by my life,
Too much am I too blame for that faire Maide,
That haue her drawne to all this troublous ſtrife,
Through promiſe to afford her timely aide,
Which by default I haue not yet defraide. 370
But witneſſe vnto me, ye heauens, that know
How cleare I am from blame of this vpbraide :
For ye into like thraldome me did throw,
And kept from compliſhing the faith, which I did owe.

But now aread, Sir *Sergis*, how long ſpace,
Hath he her lent, a Champion to prouide :
Ten daies (quoth he) he gaunted hath of grace,
For that he weeneth well, before that tide
None can haue tidings to aſſiſt her ſide.
For all the ſhores, which to the ſea accoſte, 380
He day and night doth ward both far and wide,
That none can there arriue without an hoſte :
So her he deemes already but a damned ghofte.

Now turne againe (Sir *Artegall* then ſayd)
For if I liue till thoſe ten daies haue end,
Aſſure your ſelfe, Sir Knight, ſhe ſhall haue ayd,
Though I this deareſt life for her doe ſpend ;
So backward he attone with him did wend.
Tho as they rode together on their way,
A rout of people they before them kend, 390

l. 367, 'to' (2nd) 1679: l. 371, 'know'—obvious correction of misprint of '96 and 1609 'knew.'

Flocking together in confusde array,
As if that there were some tumultuous affray.

To / which as they approcht, the cause to know,
They saw a Knight in daungerous distresse
Of a rude rout, him chafing to and fro,
That fought with lawlesse powre him to oppresse,
And bring in bondage of their brutishnesse:
And farre away, amid their rakehell bands,
They spide a Lady left all succourlesse,
Crying, and holding vp her wretched hands 400
To him for aide, who long in vaine their rage withstands.

Yet still he striues, ne any perill spares,
To reskue her from their rude violence,
And like a Lion wood amongst them fares,
Dealing his dreadfull blowes with large dispence,
Gainst which the pallid death findes no defence.
But all in vaine, their numbers are so great,
That naught may boot to banishe them from thence:
For soone as he their outrage backe doth beat,
They turne afresh, and oft renew their former threat. 410

And now they doe so sharply him assay,
That they his shield in peeces battred haue,
And forced him to throw it quite away,
Fro dangers dread his doubtfull life to saue;
Albe that it most safety to him gaue,
And much did magnifie his noble name.
For from the day that he thus did it leaue,

Amongst all Knights he blotted was with blame,
And counted but a recreant Knight, with endles shame.

Whom when they thus distressed did behold, 420
They drew vnto his aide ; but that rude rout
Them also gan assaile with outrage bold,
And forced them, how euer strong and stout /
They were, as well approu'd in many a doubt,
Backe to recule ; vntill that yron man
With his huge flaile began to lay about ;
From whose sterne prefence they diffused ran,
Like scattred chaffe, the which the wind away doth fan.

So when that Knight from perill cleare was freed,
He drawing neare, began to greete them faire, 430
And yeeld great thanks for their so goodly deed,
In sauing him from daungerous despaire
Of those, which fought his life for to empaire.
Of whom Sir *Artegall* gan then enquire
The whole occasion of his late misfare,
And who he was, and what those villaines were,
The which with mortall malice him purfu'd so nere.

To whom he thus ; My name is *Burbon* hight,
Well knowne, and far renowmed heretofore,
Vntill late mischief did vpon me light, 440
That all my former praise hath blemisht fore ;
And that faire Lady, which in that vprore
Ye with those caytiues saw, *Flourdelis* hight,
Is mine owne loue, though me she haue forlore,
Whether withheld from me by wrongfull might,
Or with her owne good will, I cannot read aright.

But sure to me her faith she first did plight,
To be my loue, and take me for her Lord,
Till that a Tyrant, which *Grandtorto* hight,
With golden giftes and many a guilefull word 450
Entyced her, to him for to accord.

O who may not with gifts and words be tempted ?
Sith which she hath me euer since abhord,
And to my foe hath guilefully consented :
Ay me, that euer guyle in wemen was inuented.

And / now he hath this troupe of villains sent,
By open force to fetch her quite away :
Gainst whom my selfe I long in vaine haue bent,
To rescue her, and daily meanes assay,
Yet rescue her thence by no meanes I may : 460
For they doe me with multitude oppresse,
And with vnequall might doe ouerlay,
That oft I driuen am to great distresse,
And forced to forgoe th'attempt remedileffe.

But why haue ye (said *Artegall*) forborne
Your owne good shield in daungerous dismay ?
That is the greatest shame and foulest scorne,
Which vnto any knight behappen may
To loose the badge, that should his deedes display.
To whom Sir *Burbon*, blushing halfe for shame, 470
That shall I vnto you (quoth he) bewray ;
Least ye therefore mote happily me blame, (came.
And deeme it doen of will, that through inforcement

True is, that I at first was dubbed knight
By a good knight, the knight of the *Redcrosse* ;

Who when he gaue me armes, in field to fight,
 Gaue me a shield, in which he did endosse
 His deare Redeemers badge vpon the bosse :
 The same longwhile I bore, and therewithall
 Fought many battels without wound or losse ; 480
 Therewith *Grandtorto* felse I did appall,
 And made him oftentimes in field before me fall.

But for that many did that shield enuie,
 And cruell enemies increased more ;
 To stint all strife and troublous enmitie,
 That bloudie scutchin being battered sore, /
 I layd aside, and haue of late forbore,
 Hoping thereby to haue my loue obtayned :
 Yet can I not my loue haue nathemore ;
 For she by force is still fro me detayned, 490
 And with corruptfull brybes is to vntruth mis-trayned.

To whom thus *Artegall* ; Certes Sir knight,
 Hard is the case, the which ye doe complaine ;
 Yet not so hard (for nought so hard may light,
 That it to such a streight mote you constraine)
 As to abandon, that which doth containe
 Your honours stile, that is your warlike shield.
 All perill ought be lesse, and lesse all paine
 Then losse of fame in disauentrous field ;
 Dye rather, then doe ought, that mote dishonour yield.

Not so ; (quoth he) for yet when time doth serue, 501
 My former shield I may resume againe :
 To temporize is not from truth to swerue,
 Ne for aduantage terme to entertaine,

L. 491, 'corrupted': L. 499, 'disaduentrous.'

When as necessitie doth it constraîne.
Fie on such forgerie (said *Artegall*)
Vnder one hood to shadow faces twaine.
Knights ought be true, and truth is one in all :
Of all things to dissemble foully may befall.

Yet let me you of courtesie request, 510
(Said *Burbon*) to assist me now at need
Against these pesants, which haue me opprest,
And forced me to so infamous deed,
That yet my loue may from their hands be freed.
Sir *Artegall*, albe he earst did wyte
His wauering mind, yet to his aide agreed,
And buckling him estfoones vnto the fight,
Did fet vpon those troupes with all his powre and might.

Who / flocking round about them, as a swarme
Of flies vpon a birchen bough doth cluster, 520
Did them assault with terrible allarme,
And ouer all the fields themselues did muster,
With bils and glayues making a dreadfull luster ;
That forst at first those knights backe to retyre :
As when the wrathfull *Boreas* doth bluster,
Nought may abide the tempest of his yre,
Both man and beast doe fly, and succour doe inquire.

But when as ouerblowen was that brunt,
Those knights began a fresh them to assayle,
And all about the fields like Squirrels hunt ; 530
But chiefly *Talus* with his yron flayle,
Gainst which no flight nor rescue mote auayle,
Made cruell hauocke of the baser crew,
And chaced them both ouer hill and dale :

The raskall manie soone they ouerthrew,
But the two knights theselues their captains did subdew.

At last they came whereas that Ladie bode,
Whom now her keepers had forſaken quight,
To ſaue themſelues, and ſcatterèd were abroad :
Her halfe diſmayd they found in doubtfull plight,
As neither glad nor ſorie for their fight ; 541
Yet wondrous faire ſhe was, and richly clad
In roiall robes, and many Iewels dight,
But that thoſe villens through their vſage bad
Them ſouly rent, and ſhamefully defaced had.

But *Burbon* ſtreight diſmounting from his ſteed,
Vnto her ran with greedie great deſyre,
And catching her faſt by her ragged weed,
Would haue embraced her with hart entyre. /
But ſhe backſtaring with diſdaineſull yre, 550
Bad him au aunt, ne would vnto his lore
Allured be, for prayer nor for meed.
Whom when thoſe knights ſo froward and forlore
Beheld, they her rebuked and vpbrayded fore.

Sayd *Artegall* ; what foule diſgrace is this,
To ſo faire Ladie, as ye ſeeme in ſight,
To blot your beautie, that vnblemiſht is,
With ſo foule blame, as breach of faith once plight,
Or change of loue for any worlds delight ?
Is ought on earth ſo pretious or deare, 560
As prayſe and honour ? Or is ought ſo bright

l. 552, 'meed'—another of Spenser's neglects—the rhyme-word requires 'hyrc,' as Church reads: l. 553, 'froward'—accepted for 'forward' of '96 from 1609.

And beautifull, as glories beames appeare, (cleare ?
Whose goodly light then *Phœbus* lampe doth shine more

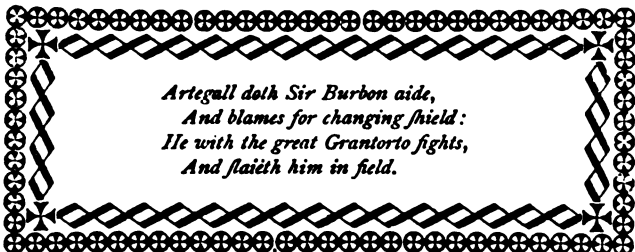
Why then will ye, fond Dame, attempted bee
Vnto a strangers loue, so lightly placed,
For guiftes of gold, or any worldly glee,
To leaue the loue, that ye before embraced,
And let your fame with falshood be defaced.
Fie on the pelfe, for which good name is sold,
And honour with indignitie debased : 570
Dearer is loue then life, and fame then gold ;
But dearer thẽ them both, your faith once plighted hold.

Much was the Ladie in her gentle mind
Abasht at his rebuke, that bit her neare,
Ne ought to answere thereunto did find ;
But hanging downe her head with heauie cheare,
Stood long amaz'd, as she amated weare.
Which *Burbon* seeing, her againe affayd,
And clasping twixt his armes, her vp did reare
Vpon his steede, whiles she no whit gainesayd ; 580
So bore her quite away, nor well nor ill apayd.

Nathlesse / the yron man did still purfew
That raskall many with vnpittied spoyle ;
Ne ceaſſed not, till all their ſcattred crew
Into the ſea he droue quite from that ſoyle,
The which they troubled had with great turmoyle.
But *Artegall* ſeeing his cruell deed,
Commaunded him from ſlaughter to recoyle,
And to his voyage gan againe proceed :
For that the terme approaching faſt, required ſpeed. 590

l. 580, ; for ,—accepted ; and so l. 583.

Cant. XII.



*Artegall doth Sir Burbon aide,
And blames for changing shield:
He with the great Grantorto fights,
And slaieth him in field.*

O Sacred hunger of ambitious mindes,
And impotent desire of men to raine,
Whom neither dread of God, that deuils bindes,
Nor lawes of men, that common weales containe,
Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes restraine, 10
Can keepe from outrage, and from doing wrong,
Where they may hope a kingdome to obtaine.
No faith so firme, no trust can be so strong,
No loue so lasting then, that may endure long.

Witnesse may *Burbon* be, whom all the bands,
Which may a Knight assure, had surely bound,^h
Vntill the loue of Lordship and of lands
Made him become most faithlesse and vnfound :/
And witnesse be *Gerioneo* found,
Who for like cause faire *Belge* did oppresse, 20
And right and wrong most cruelly confound:
And so be now *Grantorto*, who no lesse
Then all the rest burst out to all outragiousnesse.

l. 7, 'raigne': l. 14, 'enduren' for 'endure'—accepted.

Gainst whom Sir *Artegall*, long hauing since
Taken in hand th'exploit, being theretoo
Appointed by that mightie Faerie Prince,
Great *Gloriane*, that Tyrant to fordoo,
Through other great aduentures hethertoo 3
Had it forlackt. But now time drawing ny,
To him affynd, her high beheaft to doo, 30
To the sea shore he gan his way apply,
To weete if shipping readie he mote there descry.

Tho when they came to the sea coast, they found
A ship all readie (as good fortune fell)
To put to sea, with whom they did compound, 4
To passe them ouer, where them list to tell:
The winde and weather serued them so well,
That in one day they with the coast did fall;
Whereas they readie found them to repell,
Great hostes of men in order martiall, 40
Which them forbad to land, and footing did forstall.

But nathemore would they from land refraine,
But when as nigh vnto the shore they drew,
That foot of man might found the bottome plaine, 5
Talus into the sea did forth issew,
Though darts from shore & stones they at him threw;
And wading through the waues with stedfast sway,
Maugre the might of all those troupes in vew,
Did win the shore, whence he them chast away,
And made to fly, like doues, whom the Eagle doth affray.

The / whyles Sir *Artegall*, with that old knight 51
Did forth descend, there being none them neare, 6

And forward marched to a towne in fight.
 By this came tydings to the Tyrants eare,
 By those, which earst did fly away for feare
 Of their arriual: wherewith troubled fore,
 He all his forces streight to him did reare,
 And forth issuing with his scouts afore,
 Meant them to haue incountred, ere they left the shore.

But ere he marched farre, he with them met, 60
 And fiercely charged them with all his force;
 But *Talus* sternely did vpon them set,
 And brusht, and battred them without remorse,
 That on the ground he left full many a corse;
 Ne any able was him to withstand,
 But he them ouerthrew both man and horse,
 That they lay scattred ouer all the land,
 As thicke as doth the seede after the sowers hand;

Till *Artegall* him seeing so to rage,
 Willd him to stay, and signe of truce did make: 70
 To which all harkning, did a while asswage
 Their forces furie, and their terror flake;
 Till he an Herauld cald, and to him spake,
 Willing him wend vnto the Tyrant streight,
 And tell him that not for such slaughters sake
 He thether came, but for to trie the right
 Of fayre *Irenaes* cause with him in single fight.

And willed him for to reclayme with speed
 His scattred people, ere they all were slaine,

And time and place conuenient to areed, 80
In which they two the combat might darraigne. /
Which message when *Grantorto* heard, full fayne 9
And glad he was the slaughter so to stay,
And pointed for the combat twixt them twayne
The morrow next, ne gaue him longer day ;
So founded the retraite, and drew his folke away.

That night Sir *Artegall* did cause his tent
There to be pitched on the open plaine ; 10
For he had giuen streight commaundement,
That none should dare him once to entertaine : 90
Which none durst breake, though many would right
For fayre *Irena*, whom they loued deare. (faine
But yet old *Sergis* did so well him paine,
That from close friends, that dar'd not to appeare,
He all things did puruay, which for them needfull weare.

The morrow next, that was the dismall day,
Appointed for *Irenas* death before,
So foone as it did to the world display 11
His chearefull face, and light to men restore,
The heauy Mayd, to whom none tydings bore 100
Of *Artegals* arryuall, her to free,
Lookt vp with eyes full sad and hart full fore ;
Weening her lifes last howre then neare to bee,
Sith no redemption nigh she did nor heare nor fee.

Then vp she rose, and on her selfe did dight 12
Most squalid garments, fit for such a day,
And with dull countenance, and with doleful spright,
She forth was brought in sorrowfull difmay,

For to receiue the doome of her decay.
 But comming to the place, and finding there 110
 Sir *Artegall*, in battailous array
 Wayting his foe, it did her dead hart cheare,
 And new life to her lent, in midft of deadly feare.

Like / as a tender Rose in open plaine,
 That with vntimely drought nigh withered was,
 And hung the head, soone as few drops of raine
 Thereon distill, and deaw her daintie face,
 Gins to looke vp, and with fresh wonted grace 115
 Dispreds the glorie of her leaues gay ;
 Such was *Irenas* countenance, such her case, 120
 When *Artegall* she saw in that array,
 There wayting for the Tyrant, till it was farre day.

Who came at length, with proud presumptuous gate,
 Into the field, as if he searelesse were,
 All armed in a cote of yron plate, 125
 Of great defence to ward the deadly feare,
 And on his head a steele cap he did weare
 Of colour rustie browne, but sure and strong ;
 And in his hand an huge Polaxe did beare,
 Whose steale was yron studded, but not long, 130
 With which he wont to fight, to iustifie his wrong.

Of stature huge and hideous he was,
 Like to a Giant for his monstrous hight, 135
 And did in strength most forts of men surpas,
 Ne neuer any found his match in might ;

Thereto he had great skill in single fight :
His face was vgly, and his countenance sterne,
That could haue frayd one with the very fight,
And gaped like a gulfe, when he did gerne,
That whether man or monster one could scarfe discern.

Soone as he did within the listes appeare, 141
With dreadfull looke he *Artegall* beheld,
As if he would haue daunted him with seare, 16
And grinning griesly, did against him weld /
His deadly weapon, which in hand he held.
But th'Elfin swayne, that oft had seene like fight,
Was with his ghastly count'nance nothing queld,
But gan him streight to buckle to the fight,
And cast his shield about, to be in readie plight.

The trumpets found, and they together goe, 150
With dreadfull terror, and with fell intent ;
And their huge strokes full daungerously bestow, 17
To doe most dammage, where as most they ment.
But with such force and furie violent,
The tyrant thundred his thicke blowes so fast,
That through the yron walles their way they rent,
And euen to the vitall parts they past,
Ne ought could them endure, but all they cleft or braft.

Which cruell outrage when as *Artegall* 18
Did well auize, thenceforth with warie heed 160
He shund his strokes, where euer they did fall,
And way did giue vnto their gracelesse speed :

As when a skilfull Marriner doth reed
 A storme approching, that doth perill threat,
 He will not bide the daunger of such dread,
 But strikes his sayles, and vereth his mainheat,
 And lends vnto it leaue the emptie ayre to beat.

So did the Faerie knight himselfe abeare,
 And stouped oft his head from shame to shield ;
 No shame to stoupe, ones head more high to reare,
 And much to gaine, a litle for to yield ; 171
 So stoutest knights doen oftentimes in field.
 But still the tyrant sternely at him layd,
 And did his yron axe so nimble wield,
 That many wounds into his flesh it made,
 And with his burdenous blowes him fore did ouerlade.

Yet / when as fit aduantage he did spy,
 The whiles the curfed felon high did reare 20
 His cruell hand, to smite him mortally,
 Vnder his stroke he to him stepping neare, 180
 Right in the flanke him strooke with deadly dreare,
 That the gore bloud thence gushing grievously,
 Did vnderneath him like a pond appeare,
 And all his armour did with purple dye ;
 Thereat he brayed loud, and yelled dreadfully.

Yet the huge stroke, which he before intended, 21
 Kept on his course, as he did it direct,
 And with such monstrous poise adowne descended,
 That seemed nought could him from death protect :

l. 169, 'shame'—Mr. J. P. Collier suggests 'harme.'

But he it well did ward with wise respect, 190
And twixt him and the blow his shield did cast,
Which thereon seizing, tooke no great effect ;
But byting deepe therein did sticke so fast,
That by no meanes it backe againe he forth could wraft.

Longwhile he tug'd and stroue, to get it out,
And all his powre applyed thereunto,
That he therewith the knight drew all about : 2 2
Nathlesse, for all that euer he could doe,
His axe he could not from his shield vndoe.
Which *Artegall* perceiuing, strooke no more, 200
But loosing soone his shield, did it forgoe,
And whiles he combred was therewith so fore,
He gan at him let driue more fiercely then afore.

So well he him purfew'd, that at the last,
He stroke him with *Chrysaor* on the hed, 23
That with the fouse thereof full fore aghast,
He staggered to and fro in doubtfull sted. /
Againe whiles he him saw so ill bested,
He did him smite with all his might and maine,
That falling on his mother earth he fed : 210
Whom when he saw prostrated on the plaine,
He lightly reft his head, to ease him of his paine.

Which when the people round about him saw, 24
They shouted all for ioy of his successe,
Glad to be quit from that proud Tyrants awe,
Which with strōg powre did the long time oppresse ;

And running all with greedie ioyfulnesse
To faire *Irena*, at her feet did fall,
And her adored with due humblenesse,
As their true Liege and Princeesse naturall; 220
And eke her champions glorie sounded ouer all.

Who streight her leading with meete maiestie
Vnto the pallace, where their kings did rayne,
Did her therein establisth peaceable,
And to her kingdomes seat restore agayne;
And all such persons, as did late maintayne 25
That Tyrants part, with close or open ayde,
He sorely punished with heauie payne;
That in short space, whiles there with her he stayd,
Not one was left, that durst her once haue disobayd. 230

During which time, that he did there remaine,
His studie was true Iustice how to deale,
And day and night employ'd his busie paine 26
How to reforme that ragged common-weale:
And that same yron man which could reueale
All hidden crimes, through all that realme he sent,
To search out those, that vfd to rob and steale,
Or did rebell gainst lawfull gouernment;
On whom he did inflict most grieuous punishment.

But / ere he could reforme it thoroughly, 240
He through occasion called was away,
To Faerie Court, that of necessity
His course of Iustice he was forst to stay,
And *Talus* to reuoke from the right way,
In which he was that Realme for to redresse.
But enuies cloud still dimmeth vertues ray.

So hauing freed *Irena* from distresse,
He tooke his leaue of her, there left in heauinesse.

Tho as he backe returned from that land,
And there arriu'd againe, whence forth he set, 250
He had not passed farre vpon the strand,
When as two old ill fauour'd Hags he met,
By the way side being together set,
Two griesly creatures ; and, to that their faces
Most foule and filthie were, their garments yet
Being all rag'd and tatter'd, their disgraces
Did much the more augment, and made most vgly cafes.

The one of them, that elder did appeare,
With her dull eyes did seeme to looke askew,
That her mis-shape much helpt ; and her foule heare
Hung loose and loathsomely : Thereto her hew 261
Was wan and leane, that all her teeth arew,
And all her bones, might through her cheekes be red ;
Her lips were like raw lether, pale and blew,
And as she spake, therewith she flauered ;
Yet spake she seldom, but thought more, the lesse she fed.

Her hands were foule and durtie, neuer washt
In all her life, with long nayles ouer raught,
Like puttocks clawes : with th'one of which she scracht
Her curfed head, although it itched naught ; / 270
The other held a snake with venime fraught,
On which she fed, and gnawed hungrily,
As if that long she had not eaten ought ;

l. 263, , after 'bones'—accepted : l. 271, 'hungrily.'

That round about her iawes one might descry
The bloudie gore and poyson dropping lothsomely.

Her name was *Enuic*, knowen well thereby ;
Whose nature is to grieue, and grudge at all,
That euer she sees doen prayf-worthily :
Whose sight to her is greatest crosse, may fall,
And vexeth so, that makes her eat her gall. 280
For when she wanteth other thing to eat,
She feedes on her owne maw vnnaturall,
And of her owne soule entrayles makes her meat ;
Meat fit for such a monsters monstrous dyeat.

And if she hapt of any good to heare,
That had to any happily betid,
Then would she inly fret, and grieue, and teare
Her flesh for felnesse, which she inward hid :
But if she heard of ill, that any did,
Or harme, that any had, then would she make 290
Great cheare, like one vnto a banquet bid ;
And in anothers losse great pleasure take,
As she had got thereby, and gayned a great stake.

The other nothing better was, then shee ;
Agreeing in bad will and cancred kynd,
But in bad maner they did disagree :
For what so *Enuie* good or bad did fynd,
She did conceale, and murder her owne mynd ;
But this, what euer euill she conceiued,
Did spred abroad, and throw in th'open wynd. 300
Yet this in all her words might be perceiued, (reaued.
That all she sought, was mens good name to haue be-

For / what foeuer good by any sayd,
Or doen she heard, she would streightwayes inuent,
How to deprauē, or slaunderously vpbrayd,
Or to misconstrue of a mans intent,
And turne to ill the thing, that well was ment.
Therefore she vsed often to resort,
To common haunts, and companies frequent,
To hearke what any one did good report, 310
To blot the same with blame, or wrest in wicked
fort.

And if that any ill she heard of any,
She would it eeke, and make much worfe by telling,
And take great ioy to publish it to many,
That euery matter worfe was for her melling,
Her name was hight *Detraction*, and her dwelling
Was neare to *Enuie*, euen her neighbour next ;
A wicked hag, and *Enuy* selfe excelling
In mischiefe : for her selfe she onely vext ;
But this fame both her selfe, and others eke perplex.

Her face was vgly, and her mouth distort, 321
Foming with poyson round about her gils,
In which her curfed tongue full sharpe and short
Appear'd like Aspis sting, that closely kills,
Or cruelly does wound, whom so she wils :
A distaffe in her other hand she had,
Vpon the which she litle spinnes, but spils,
And faynes to weaue false tales and leafings bad,
To throw amongst the good, which others had disprad.

These two now had themselues combynd in one, 330
 And linckt together gainst Sir *Artegall*,
 For whom they wayted as his mortall fone,
 How they might make him into mischiefe fall, /
 For freeing from their snares *Irena* thrall :
 Befides vnto themselues they gotten had
 A monster, which the *Blatant beast* men call,
 A dreadfull feend of gods and men ydrad,
 Whom they by flights allur'd, and to their purpose lad.

Such were these Hags, and so vnhandfome drest :
 Who when they nigh approching, had espyde 340
 Sir *Artegall* return'd from his late quest,
 They both arose, and at him loudly cryde,
 As it had bene two shepheards cures, had scryde
 A rauenous Wolfe amongst the scattered flockes.
 And *Ennie* first, as she that first him eyde,
 Towardes him runs, and with rude flaring lockes
 About her eares, does beat her brest, & forehead knockes.

Then from her mouth the gobbet she does take,
 The which whyleare she was so greedily
 Deuouring, euen that halfe-gnawen snake, 350
 And at him throwes it most despightfully.
 The curfed Serpent, though she hungrily
 Earst chawd thereon, yet was not all so dead,
 But that some life remayned secretly,
 And as he past afore withouten dread,
 Bit him behind, that long the marke was to be read.

Then th'other comming neare, gan him reuile,
 And fouly rayle, with all she could inuent ;

Saying, that he had with vnmanly guile,
 And foule abufion both his honour blent, 360
 And that bright fword, the fword of Iuftice lent,
 Had stayned with reprochfull crueltie,
 In guiltleffe blood of many an innocent:
 As for *Grandtorto*, him with treacherie
 And traynes hauing surpriz'd, he foully did to die.

Thereto / the Blatant beaft by them fet on
 At him began aloud to barke and bay,
 With bitter rage and fell contention,
 That all the woods and rockes nigh to that way,
 Began to quake and tremble with difmay; 370
 And all the aire rebellowed againe.
 So dreadfully his hundred tongues did bray,
 And euermore thofe hags them felues did paine,
 To sharpen him, and their owne curfed tongs did straine.

And ftill among moft bitter wordes they fpake,
 Moft fhamefull, moft vnrighteous, moft vntrew,
 That they the mildeft man aliue would make
 Forget his patience, and yeeld vengeance dew
 To her, that fo falfe fclaunders at him threw.
 And more to make thē pierce & wound more deepe,
 She with the ftिंग, which in her vile tongue grew,
 Did sharpen them, and in frefh poyfon fteepe: 382
 Yet he pafte on, and feem'd of them to take no keepe.

But *Talus* hearing her fo lewdly raile,
 And fpeake fo ill of him, that well deferued,

l. 361., placed after first '*fword*' and removed after the second: also
 , after '*lent*'—accepted: l. 379, '*fclaunders*.'

Would her haue chaftiz'd with his yron flaile,
If her Sir *Artegall* had not preferued,
And him forbidden, who his heaft obserued.
So much the more at him still did she scold,
And stones did cast, yet he for nought would swerue
From his right course, but still the way did hold 391
To Faery Court, where what him fell shall else be told. /



THE SIXTH
BOOKE OF THE
FAERIE QVEENE.

Contayning

THE LEGEND OF S. CALIDORE.
OR
OF COVRTESIE.

He waies, through which my wearie steps I guyde,
In this delightfull land of Faery,
Are so exceeding spacious and wyde, 10
And sprinckled with such sweet variety,
Of all that pleafant is to eare or eye,
That I nigh rauisht with rare thoughts delight,
My tedious trauell doe forget thereby ;
And when I gin to feele decay of might,
It strength to me supplies, & chears my dulled fpright.

Such fecret comfort, and fuch heauenly pleasures,
Ye fared imps, that on *Parnaffo* dwell,

l. 1, 'Sixt': l. 7, 'corteſie.'

And there the keeping haue of learnings threasures,
 Which doe all worldly riches farre excell, 20
 Into the mindes of mortall men doe well,
 And goodly fury into them infuse ;
 Guyde ye my footing, and conduct me well
 In these strange waies, where neuer foote did vse,
 Ne none can find, but who was taught them by the Muse ;/

Reuele to me the sacred nourfery
 Of vertue, which with you doth there remaine,
 Where it in siluer bowre does hidden ly
 From view of men, and wicked worlds disdaine.
 Since it at first was by the Gods with paine 30
 Planted in earth, being deriu'd at furst
 From heauenly seedes of bounty foueraine,
 And by them long with carefull labour nurst,
 Till it to ripenessse grew, and forth to honour burst.

Amongst them all growes not a fayrer flowre,
 Then is the bloosme of comely courtesie,
 Which though it on a lowly stalke doe bowre,
 Yet brancheth forth in braue nobilitie,
 And spreds it selfe through all ciuilitie :
 Of which though present age doe plenteous seeme, 40
 Yet being matcht with plaine Antiquitie,
 Ye will them all but fayned shoves esteeme,
 Which carry colours faire, that feeble eies misdeeme.

But in the triall of true curtesie,
 Its now so farre from that, which then it was,

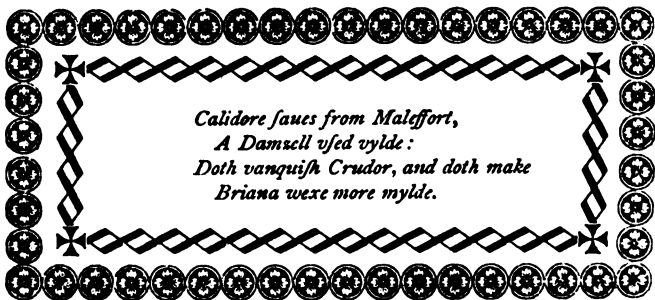
That it indeed is nought but forgerie,
 Fashion'd to please the eies of them, that pas,
 Which see not perfect things but in a glas :
 Yet is that glasse so gay, that it can blynd
 The wifest sight, to thinke gold that is bras. 50
 But vertues feat is deepe within the mynd,
 And not in outward shows, but inward thoughts defynd.

But where shall I in all Antiquity
 So faire a patterne finde, where may be seene
 The goodly praise of Princely curtesie,
 As in your selfe, O soueraine Lady Queene,
 In / whose pure minde, as in a mirrour sheene
 It shoves, and with her brightnesse doth inflame
 The eyes of all, which thereon fixed beene ;
 But meriteth indeede an higher name : 60
 Yet so from low to high vplifted is your fame.

Then pardon me, most dreaded Soueraine,
 That from your selfe I doe this vertue bring,
 And to your selfe doe it returne againe :
 So from the Ocean all riuers spring
 And tribute backe repay as to their King.
 Right so from you all goodly vertues well
 Into the rest, which round about you ring,
 Faire Lords and Ladies, which about you dwell,
 And doe adorne your Court, where courtesies excell. 70

1. 61, '*fame*'—Collier's correction of the obvious mistake of '*name*' repeated from l. 60.

Cant. I.



OF Court it seemes, men Courtesie doe call,
 For that it there most vseth to abound ;
 And well befeemeth that in Princes hall
 That vertue should be plentifully found,
 Which of all goodly manners is the ground, 10
 And roote of ciuill conuerfation.
 Right so in Faery court it did redound,
 Where curteous Knights and Ladies most did won
 Of all on earth, and made a matchlesse paragon.

But mongst them all was none more courteous Knight,
 Then *Calidore*, beloued ouer all,
 In whom it seemes, that gentlenesse of spright
 And manners mylde were planted naturall ;
 To which he adding comely guize withall,
 And gracious speach, did steale mens hearts away. 20
 Nathlesse thereto he was full stout and tall,
 And well approu'd in batteilous affray,
 That him did much renowme, and far his fame display.

Ne was there Knight, ne was there Lady found
In Faery court, but him did deare embrace,
For his faire vface and conditions found,
The which in all mens liking gayned place,
And / with the greateft purchaft greateft grace :
Which he could wifely vse, and well apply,
To please the best, and th'euill to embase. 30
For he loathd leaſing, and baſe flattery,
And loued ſimple truth and ſtedfaſt honeſty.

And now he was in trauell on his way,
Vppon an hard aduenture fore beſtad,
Whenas by chaunce he met vppon a day
With *Artegall*, returning yet halfe ſad
From his late conqueſt, which he gotten had.
Who whenas each of other had a fight,
They knew them ſelues, and both their perſons rad :
When *Calidore* thus firſt ; Haile nobleſt Knight 40
Of all this day on ground, that brethen liuing ſpright.

Now tell, if pleaſe you, of the good ſucceſſe,
Which ye haue had in your late enterprize.
To whom Sir *Artegall* gan to expreſſe
His whole exploite, and valorous emprize,
In order as it did to him ariſe.
Now happy man (ſayd then Sir *Calidore*)
Which haue ſo goodly, as ye can deuize,
Atchieu'd ſo hard a queſt, as few before ;
That ſhall you moſt renowned make for euermore. 50

But where ye ended haue, now I begin
To tread an endleſſe trace, withouten guyde,

Or good direction, how to enter in,
 Or how to issue forth in waies vntryde,
 In perils strange, in labours long and wide ;
 In which although good Fortune me befall,
 Yet shall it not by none be testifyde.

What is that quest (quoth then Sir *Artegall*)
 That you into such perils presently doth call ? /

The Blattant Beast (quoth he) I doe pursew, 60
 And through the world inoeffantly doe chase,
 Till I him ouertake, or else subdew :
 Yet know I not or how, or in what place
 To find him out, yet still I forward trace.
 What is that Blattant Beast ? (then he replide)
 It is a Monster bred of hellishe race,
 (Then answerd he) which often hath annoyd
 Good Knights and Ladies true, and many else destroyd.

Of *Cerberus* whilome he was begot,
 And fell *Chimæra* in her darkefome den, 70
 Through fowle commixture of his filthy blot ;
 Where he was fostred long in *Stygian* fen,
 Till he to perfect ripenesse grew, and then
 Into this wicked world he forth was sent,
 To be the plague and scourge of wretched men :
 Whom with vile tongue and venemous intent
 He fore doth wound, and bite, and cruelly torment.

Then since the saluage Island I did leaue
 Sayd *Artegall*, I such a Beast did see,
 The which did seeme a thousand tongues to haue, 80
 That all in spight and malice did agree,

l. 55, ; for,—accepted : l. 75, 'wicked' (1611) : l. 94, : for , .

With which he bayd and loudly barkt at mee,
As if that he att once would me deuoure.
But I that knew my selfe from perill free,
Did nought regard his malice nor his powre,
But he the more his wicked poyson forth did poure.

That surely is that Beast (saide *Calidore*)
Which I purfue, of whom I am right glad
To heare these tidings, which of none afore
Through all my weary trauell I haue had : 90
Yet / now some hope your words vnto me add.
Now God you speed (quoth then Sir *Artegall*)
And keepe your body from the daunger drad :
For ye haue much adoe to deale withall :
So both tooke goodly leaue, and parted feuerall.

Sir *Calidore* thence trauelled not long,
When as by chaunce a comely Squire he found,
That thorough some more mighty enemies wrong,
Both hand and foote vnto a tree was bound :
Who seeing him from farre, with piteous sound 100
Of his shrill cries him called to his aide.
To whom approching, in that painefull stound
When he him saw, for no demaunds he staide,
But first him losde, and afterwards thus to him saide.

Vnhappy Squire, what hard mishap thee brought
Into this bay of perill and disgrace ?
What cruell hand thy wretched thraldome wrought,
And thee captiued in this shamefull place ?
To whom he answerd thus ; My haplesse case
Is not occaſiond through my misdesert, 110
But through misfortune, which did me abase

Vnto this shame, and my young hope subuert,
Ere that I in her guilefull traines was well expert.

Not farre from hence, vppon yond rocky hill,
Hard by a streight there stands a castle strong,
Which doth obserue a custome lewd and ill,
And it hath long mayntaind with mighty wrong :
For may no Knight nor Lady passe along
That way, (and yet they needs must passe that way),
By reason of the streight, and rocks among, 120
But they that Ladies lockes doe shaue away,
And that knights berd for toll, which they for passage
pay. /

A shamefull vse as euer I did heare,
Sayd *Calidore*, and to be ouerthrowne.
But by what meanes did they at first it reare,
And for what cause, tell if thou haue it knowne.
Sayd then that Squire : The Lady which doth owne
This Castle, is by name *Briana* hight ;
Then which a prouder Lady liueth none :
She longtime hath deare lou'd a doughty Knight, 130
And sought to win his loue by all the meanes she might.

His name is *Crudor*, who through high disdaine
And proud despight of his selfe pleasing mynd,
Refused hath to yeeld her loue againe,
Vntill a Mantle she for him doe fynd,
With beards of Knights and locks of Ladies lynd.
Which to prouide, she hath this Castle dight,
And therein hath a Seneschall affynd,

Cald *Maleffort*, a man of mickle might,
Who executes her wicked will, with worse despight. 140

He this fame day, as I that way did come
With a faire Damzell, my beloued deare,
In execution of her lawlesse doome,
Did set vppon vs flying both for feare :
For little bootes against him hand to reare.
Me first he tooke, vnhabable to withstond ;
And whiles he her purfued euery where,
Till his returne vnto this tree he bond :
Ne wote I surely, whether her he yet haue fond.

Thus whiles they spake, they heard a ruefull shrieke 150
Of one loud crying, which they streight way ghest,
That it was she, the which for helpe did seeke.
Tho looking vp vnto the cry to left,
They / saw that Carle from farre, with hand vnblest
Hayling that mayden by the yellow heare,
That all her garments from her snowy breft,
And from her head her lockes he nigh did teare,
Ne would he spare for pittie, nor refraine for feare.

Which haynous fight when *Calidore* beheld,
Eftsoones he loofd that Squire, and so him left, 160
With hearts difmay and inward dolour queld,
For to purfue that villaine, which had rest
That piteous spoile by so iniurious theft
Whom ouertaking, loude to him he cryde ;
Leaue faytor quickly that misgotten west

To him, that hath it better iustifyde,
And turne thee soone to him, of whom thou art defyde.

Who hearkning to that voice, him selfe vpreard,
And seeing him so fiercely towards make,
Against him stoutly ran, as nought afeard, 170
But rather more enrag'd for those words sake ;
And with sterne count'naunce thus vnto him spake.
Art thou the caytiue, that defyest me,
And for this Mayd, whose party thou doest take,
Wilt giue thy beard, though it but little bee ?
Yet shall it not her lockes for raunsome fro me free.

With that he fiercely at him flew, and layd
On hideous strokes with most importune might,
That oft he made him stagger as vnstayd,
And oft recuile to shunne his sharpe despight. 180
But *Calidore*, that was well skild in fight,
Him long forbore, and still his spirite spar'd,
Lying in waite, how him he damadge might.
But when he felt him shrinke, and come to ward,
He greater grew, and gan to driue at him more hard. /

Like as a water streame, whose swelling fourfe
Shall driue a Mill, within strong bancks is pent,
And long restrayned of his ready course ;
So soone as passage is vnto him lent,
Breakes forth, and makes his way more violent. 190
Such was the fury of Sir *Calidore*,
When once he felt his foeman to relent ;
He fiercely him purfu'd, and pressed fore,
Who as he still decayd, so he encreased more.

The heauy burden of whose dreadfull might
When as the Carle no longer could sustaine,
His heart gan faint, and streight he tooke his flight
Toward the Castle, where if need constraine,
His hope of refuge vsed to remaine.
Whom *Calidore* perceiuing fast to flie, 200
He him purfu'd and chaced through the plaine,
That he for dread of death gan loude to crie
Vnto the ward, to open to him hastilie.

They from the wall him seeing so aghast,
The gate soone opened to receiue him in,
But *Calidore* did follow him so fast,
That euen in the Porch he him did win,
And cleft his head asunder to his chin.
The carkasse tumbling downe within the dore,
Did choke the entraunce with a lumpe of fin, 210
That it could not be shut, whilest *Calidore*
Did enter in, and slew the Porter on the flore.

With that the rest, the which the Castle kept,
About him flockt, and hard at him did lay ;
But he them all from him full lightly swept,
As doth a Steare, in heat of sommers day,
With / his long taile the bryzes brush away.
Thence passing forth, into the hall he came,
Whereof the Lady selfe in sad dismay
He was ymett : who with vncomely shame 220
Gan him salute, and fowle vpbrayd with faulty blame.

Falfe traytor Knight, (fayd she) no Knight at all,
But sorne of armes that haft with guilty hand

l. 209, 'carkasse' : l. 216, , substituted for : l. 220, : for ,—accepted.

Murdred my men, and flaine my Seneschall ;
 Now comest thou to rob my houle vnmand,
 And spoile my selfe, that can not thee withstand ?
 Yet doubt thou not, but that some better Knight
 Then thou, that shall thy treason vnderstand,
 Will it auenge, and pay thee with thy right :
 And if none do, yet shame shal thee with shame requight.

Much was the Knight abashed at that word ; 231
 Yet answered thus ; Not vnto me the shame,
 But to the shamefull doer it afford.
 Bloud is no blemish ; for it is no blame
 To punish those, that doe deserue the fame ;
 But they that breake bands of ciuilitie,
 And wicked customes make, those doe defame
 Both noble armes and gentle curtesie.
 No greater shame to man then inhumanitie.

Then doe your selfe, for dread of shame, forgoe 240
 This euill manner, which ye here maintaine,
 And doe in stead thereof mild curt'sie shoue
 To all, that passe. That shall you glory gaine
 More then his loue, which thus ye seeke t'obtaine.
 Wherewith all full of wrath, she thus replyde ;
 Vile recreant, know that I doe much disdaine
 Thy courteous lore, that doest my loue deride,
 Who scornes thy ydle scoffe, and bids thee be defyde. /

To take defiaunce at a Ladies word
 (Quoth he) I hold it no indignity ; 250
 But were he here, that would it with his sword
 Abett, perhaps he mote it deare aby.

Cowherd (quoth she) were not, that thou wouldst fly,
Ere he doe come, he should be soone in place.
If I doe so, (sayd he) then liberty
I leaue to you, for aye me to disgrace
With all those shames, that erst ye spake me to deface.

With that a Dwarfe she cald to her in hast,
And taking from her hand a ring of gould,
A priuy token, which betweene them past, 260
Bad him to flie with all the speed he could,
To *Crudor*, and desire him that he would
Vouchsafe to reskue her against a Knight,
Who thugh ströḡ powre had now her self in hould,
Hauing late slaine her Seneschall in fight,
And all her people mured with outrageous might.

The Dwarfe his way did hast, and went all night ;
But *Calidore* did with her there abyde
The comming of that so much threatned Knight ;
Where that discourteous Dame with scornfull pryde,
And fowle entreaty him indignifyde, 270
That yron heart it hardly could sustaine :
Yet he, that could his wrath full wisely guyde,
Did well endure her womanish disdaine,
And did him selfe from fraile impatience refraine.

The morrow next, before the lampe of light,
Aboue the earth vpreard his flaming head,
The Dwarfe, which bore that message to her knight,
Brought aunswere backe, that ere he tasted bread,

l. 253, 'Coward,' as before : l. 254, 'he' for 'thou'—accepted : l. 260,
within () : l. 269, ; substituted for , .

He / would her succour, and aliue or dead 280
 Her foe deliuer vp into her hand :
 Therefore he wild her doe away all dread ;
 And that of him she mote assured stand,
 He sent to her his basenet, as a faithfull band.

Thereof full blyth the Lady streight became,
 And gan t'augment her bitterneffe much more :
 Yet no whit more appalled for the same,
 Ne ought dismayed was Sir *Calidore*,
 But rather did more chearefull seeme therefore.
 And hauing foone his armés about him dight, 290
 Did issue forth, to meete his foe afore ;
 Where long he stayed not, when as a Knight
 He spide come pricking on with al his powre and might.

Well weend he streight, that he should be the same,
 Which tooke in hand her quarrell to maintaine ;
 Ne stayd to aske if it were he by name,
 But coucht his speare, and ran at him amaine.
 They bene ymett in middest of the plaine,
 With so fell fury, and dispiteous forfe,
 That neither could the others stroke sustaine, 300
 But rudely rowld to ground both man and horse,
 Neither of other taking pitty nor remorse.

But *Calidore* vprose againe full light,
 Whiles yet his foe lay fast in fencelesse found,
 Yet would he not him hurt, although he might :
 For shame he weend a sleeping wight to wound.
 But when *Briana* saw that dreery found,
 There where she stood vpon the Castle wall,
 She deem'd him sure to haue bene dead on ground,

And made such piteous mourning therewithall, 310
That from the battlements she ready seem'd to fall. /

Nathlesse at length him selfe he did vpreare
In lustlesse wife, as if against his will,
Ere he had slept his fill, he wakened were,
And gan to stretch his limbs ; which feeling ill
Of his late fall, a while he rested still :
But when he saw his foe before in vew,
He shooke off luskishnesse, and courage chill
Kindling a fresh, gan battell to renew,
To proue if better foote then horsebacke would enfew.

There then began a fearefull cruell fray 321
Betwixt them two, for maystery of might.
For both were wondrous practicke in that play,
And passing well expert in single fight,
And both inflam'd with furious despight :
Which as it still encreast, so still increast
Their cruell strokes and terrible affright ;
Ne once for ruth their rigour they releast,
Ne once to breath a while their angers tempest ceast.

Thus long they trac'd and trauest to and fro, 330
And tryde all waies, how each mote entrance make
Into the life of his malignant foe ;
They hew'd their helmes, and plates afunder brake,
As they had potshares bene ; for nought mote flake
Their greedy vengeaunces, but goary blood,
That at the last like to a purple lake
Of bloudy gore congeal'd about them stood,
Which from their riuen sides forth gushed like a flood.

l. 334, 'pot/hards' (1611).

At length it chaunst, that both their hands on hie,
 At once did heaue, with all their powre and might,
 Thinking the vtmost of their force to trie, 341
 And proue the finall fortune of the fight :
 But / *Calidore*, that was more quicke of fight,
 And nimbler handed, then his enemye,
 Preuented him before his stroke could light,
 And on the helmet smote him formerlie,
 That made him stoupe to ground with meeke humilitie.

And ere he could recouer foot againe,
 He following that faire aduantage fast,
 His stroke redoubled with such might and maine,
 That him vpon the ground he groueling cast ; 351
 And leaping to him light, would haue vnlaft
 His Helme, to make vnto his vengeance way.
 Who seeing, in what daunger he was plapt,
 Cryde out, Ah mercie Sir, doe me not slay,
 But saue my life, which lot before your foot doth lay.

With that his mortall hand a while he stayd,
 And hauing somewhat calm'd his wrathfull heat
 With goodly patience, thus he to him sayd ;
 And is the boast of that proud Ladies threat, 360
 That menaced me from the field to beat,
 Now brought to this ? By this now may ye learne,
 Strangers no more so rudely to intreat,
 But put away proud looke, and vsage sterne,
 The which shal nought to you but foule dishonor yearne.

For nothing is more blamefull to a knight,
 That court'fie doth as well as armes professe,

How euer strong and fortunate in fight,
Then the reproch of pride and cruelnesse.
In vaine he seeketh others to suppressse, 370
Who hath not learnd him selfe first to subdew :
All flesh is frayle, and full of ficklenesse,
Subiect to fortunes chance, still chaunging new ;
What haps to day to me, to morrow may to you. /

Who will not mercie vnto others shew,
How can he mercie euer hope to haue ?
To pay each with his owne is right and dew.
Yet since ye mercie now doe need to craue,
I will it graunt, your hopelesse life to saue ;
With these conditions, which I will propound : 380
First, that ye better shall your selfe behaue
“ Vnto all errant knights, wherefo on ground ;
Next that ye Ladies ayde in euery stead and stound.

The wretched man, that all this while did dwell
In dread of death, his heasts did gladly heare,
And promist to performe his precept well,
And whatfoeuer else he would requere.
So suffering him to rise, he made him sweare
By his owne sword, and by the crosse thereon,
To take *Briana* for his louing fere, 390
Withouten dowre or composition ;
But to release his former foule condition.

All which accepting, and with faithfull oth
Bynding himselfe most firmly to obay,
He vp arose, how euer liefse or loth,
And swore to him true fealtie for aye.
Then forth he cald from sorrowfull dismay

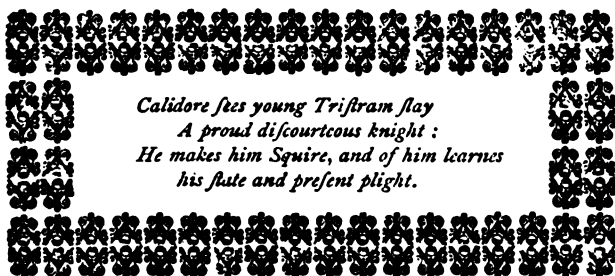
The sad *Briana*, which all this beheld :
 Who comming forth yet full of late affray,
 Sir *Calidore* vpheard, and to her told
 All this accord, to which he *Crudor* had compeld.

Whereof she now more glad, then fory earst,
 All ouercome with infinite affect,
 For his exceeding courtesie, that pearst
 Her stubborne hart with inward deepe effect,
 Before / his feet her selfe she did proiect,
 And him adoring as her liues deare Lord,
 With all due thankes, and dutifull respect,
 Her selfe acknowledg'd bound for that accord,
 By which he had to her both life and loue restord. 410

So all returning to the Castle glad,
 Most ioyfully she them did entertaine,
 Where goodly glee and feast to them she made,
 To shew her thankefull mind and meaning faine,
 By all the meanes she mote it best explaine :
 And after all, vnto Sir *Calidore*
 She freely gaue that Castle for his paine,
 And her selfe bound to him for euermore ;
 So wondrously now chaung'd, from that she was afore.

But *Calidore* himselfe would not retaine 420
 Nor land nor fee, for hyre of his good deede,
 But gaue them streight vnto that Squire againe,
 Whom from her Seneschall he lately freed,
 And to his damzell as their rightfull meed,
 For recompence of all their former wrong :
 There he remaind with them right well agreed,
 Till of his wounds he waxed hole and strong,
 And then to his first quest he passed forth along. 428

Cant. / II.



V V Hat vertue is so fitting for a knight,
 Or for a Ladie, whom a knight should loue,
 As Curtesie, to beare themselues aright
 To all of each degree, as doth behoue ?
 For whether they be placed high aboue, 10
 Or low beneath, yet ought they well to know
 Their good, that none them rightly may reprove
 Of rudenesse, for not yeelding what they owe :
 Great skill it is such duties timely to bestow.

Thereto great helpe dame Nature felse doth lend :
 For some so goodly gracious are by kind,
 That euery action doth them much commend,
 And in the eyes of men great liking find ;
 Which others, that haue greater skill in mind,
 Though they enforce themselues, cannot attaine. 20
 For euerie thing, to which one is inclin'd,

Doth best become, and greatest grace doth gaine :
Yet praise likewise deferue good thewes, enforst with
paine.

That well in courteous *Calidore* appeares,
Whose euery act and word, that he did fay,
Was like enchantment, that through both the eares,
And both the eyes did steale the hart away.
He / now againe is on his former way,
To follow his first quest, when as he spyde
A tall young man from thence not farre away, 30
Fighting on foot, as well he him descryde,
Against an armed knight, that did on horsebacke ryde.

And them beside a Ladie faire he saw,
Standing alone on foot, in foule array :
To whom himselfe he hastily did draw,
To weet the cause of so vncomely fray,
And to depart them, if so be he may.
But ere he came in place, that youth had kild
That armed knight, that low on ground he lay ;
Which when he saw, his hart was inly child 40
With great amazement, & his thought with wonder
fld.

Him stedfastly he markt, and saw to bee
A goodly youth of amiable grace,
Yet but a slender slip, that scarce did see
Yet feunteene yeares, but tall and faire of face

l. 25, 'act and word' accepted for 'act and deed' of '96 : ll. 26 7, 'eares' and 'eyes' are misplaced in the respective lines, as the rhyme-word 'appeares' shows, both in 1596 and 1609 and all.

■ That sure he deem'd him borne of noble race.
 ■ All in a woodmans iacket he was clad
 Of lincolne greene, belayd with filuer lace ;
 And on his head an hood with aglets sprad,
 And by his side his hunters horne he hanging 50
 had.

Buskins he wore of costliest cordwayne,
 Pinckt vpon gold, and paled part per part,
 As then the guize was for each gentle swayne ;
 In his right hand he held a trembling dart,
 Whose fellow he before had sent apart ;
 And in his left he held a sharpe borespeare,
 With which he wont to launch the saluage hart
 Of many a Lyon, and of many a Beare
 That first vnto his hand in chafe did happen neare. /

Whom *Calidore* a while well hauing vewed, 60
 At length bespake ; what meanes this, gentle swaine?
 Why hath thy hand too bold it selfe embrewed
 In blood of knight, the which by thee is slaine,
 By thee no knight ; which armes impugneth plaine ?
 Certes (said he) loth were I to haue broken
 The law of armes ; yet breake it should againe,
 Rather then let my selfe of wight be stroken,
 So long as these two armes were able to be wroken.

For not I him as this his Ladie here
 May witnesse well, did offer first to wrong, 70
 Ne surely thus vnarm'd I likely were ;
 But he me first, through pride and puiſſance strong
 Assayld, not knowing what to armes doth long.

Perdie great blame, (then said Sir *Calidore*)
 For armed knight a wight vnarm'd to wrong.
 But then aread, thou gentle chyld, wherefore
 Betwixt you two began this strife and sterne vprore.

That shall I sooth (said he) to you declare.
 I whose vnryper yeares are yet vnfit
 For thing of weight, or worke of greater care, 80
 Doe spend my dayes, and bend my carelesse wit
 To saluage chace, where I thereon may hit
 In all this forrest, and wyld wooddie raine:
 Where, as this day I was enraunging it,
 I chaunst to meete this knight, who there lyes flaine,
 Together with this Ladie, passing on the plaine.

The knight, as ye did see, on horsebacke was,
 And this his Ladie, (that him ill became,)
 On her faire feet by his horse side did pas
 Through thicke and thin, vnfit for any Dame. 90
 Yet / not content, more to increase his shame,
 When so she lagged, as she needs mote so,
 He with his speare, that was to him great blame,
 Would thumpe her forward, and inforce to goe,
 Weeping to him in vaine, and making piteous woe.

Which when I saw, as they me passed by,
 Much was I moued in indignant mind,
 And gan to blame him for such cruelty
 Towards a Ladie, whom with vsage kind
 He rather should haue taken vp behind. 100

Wherewith he wroth, and full of proud disdaine,
Tooke in foule scorne, that I such fault did find,
And me in lieu thereof reuil'd againe,
Threatning to chaftize me, as doth t'a chyld pertaine.

Which I no leffe difdayning, backe returned
His scornfull taunts vnto his teeth againe,
That he streight way with haughtie choler burned,
And with his speare strooke me one stroke or twaine;
Which I enforst to beare though to my paine,
Cast to requite, and with a slender dart, 110
Fellow of this I beare, throwne not in vaine,
Stroke him, as seemeth, vnderneath the hart,
That through the wound his spirit shortly did depart.

Much did Sir *Calidore* admyre his speech
Tempred so well, but more admyr'd the stroke
That through the mayles had made so strong a breach
Into his hart, and had so sternely wroke
His wrath on him, that first occasion broke.
Yet rested not, but further gan inquire
Of that same Ladie, whether what he spoke, 120
Were soothly so, and that th' vnrighteous ire
Of her owne knight, had giuen him his owne due
hire. /

Of all which, when as she could nought deny,
But cleard that stripling of th' imputed blame,
Sayd then Sir *Calidore*; neither will I
Him charge with guilt, but rather doe quite clame:

For what he spake, for you he spake it, Dame ;
 And what he did, he did him selfe to saue : (shame. A
 Against both which that knight wrought knightlesse
 For knights and all men this by nature haue, 130
 Towards all womenkind them kindly to behaue.

But sith that he is gone irreuocable,
 Please it you Ladie, to vs to aread,
 What cause could make him so dishonourable,
 To driue you so on foot vnfit to tread,
 And lackey by him, gainst all womanhead ?
 Certes Sir knight (sayd she) full loth I were
 To rayse a lyuing blame against the dead :
 But since it me concernes, my selfe to clere,
 I will the truth discouer, as it chaunst whylere. 140

This day, as he and I together roade
 Vpon our way, to which we weren bent,
 We chaunst to come foreby a couert glade
 Within a wood, whereas a Ladie gent
 Sate with a knight in ioyous iolliment,
 Of their franke loues, free from all gealous spyes :
 Faire was the Ladie fure, that mote content
 An hart, not carried with too curious eyes,
 And vnto him did shew all louely courtesyes.

Whom when my knight did see so louely faire, 150
 He inly gan her louer to enuy,
 And wish, that he part of his spoyle might share.
 Whereto when as my prefence he did spy
 To / be a let, he bad me by and by
 For to alight : but when as I was loth,
 My loues owne part to leaue so suddenly,

He with strong hand down from his steed me throw'th,
And with presumptuous powre against that knight
streight go'th.

Vnarm'd all was the knight, as then more meete
For Ladies seruice, and for loues delight, 160
Then fearing any foeman there to meete :
Whereof he taking oddes, streight bids him dight
Himselfe to yeeld his loue, or else to fight.
Whereat the other starting vp dismayd,
Yet boldly answer'd, as he rightly might ;
To leaue his loue he should be ill apayd,
In which he had good right gaynst all, that it gainesayd.

Yet since he was not presently in plight
Her to defend, or his to iustifie,
He him requested, as he was a knight, 170
To lend him day his better right to trie,
Or stay till he his armes, which were thereby,
Might lightly fetch. But he was fierce and whot,
Ne time would giue, nor any termes aby,
But at him flew, and with his speare him smot ;
From which to thinke to saue himselfe, it booteth not.

Meanewhile his Ladie, which this outrage saw,
Whilest they together for the quarrey stroue,
Into the couert did her selfe withdraw,
And closely hid her selfe within the groue. 180
My knight hers soone, as seemes, to daunger droue
And left fore wounded : but when her he mist,
He woxe halfe mad, and in that rage gan roue

l. 172, (*which . . . by*) : l. 181, (*as seemes*).

And range through all the wood, where so he wif
She hidden was, and fought her so long, as him list.

But when as her he by no meanes could find,
After long searck and chauff, he turned backe
Vnto the place, where me he left behind :
There gan he me to curse and ban, for lacke
Of that faire bootie, and with bitter wracke 1
To wreake on me the guilt of his owne wrong.
Of all which I yet glad to beare the packe,
Stroue to appease him, and perfwaded long :
But still his passion grew more violent and strong.

Then as it were t'auenge his wrath on mee,
When forward we should fare, he flat refused
To take me vp (as this young man did see)
Vpon his steed, for no iust cause accused,
But forst to trot on foot, and foule misused,
Pouching me with the butt end of his spcare, 2
In vaine complayning, to be so abused.
For he regarded neither playnt nor teare,
But more enforst my paine, the more my plaints to hea

So passed we, till this young man vs met,
And being moou'd with pittie of my plight,
Spake, as was meet, for ease of my regret :
Whereof befell, what now is in your sight.
Now sure (then said Sir *Calidore*) and right
Me seemes, that him befell by his owne fault :
Who euer thinkes through confidence of might, 2

Or through support of count'nance proud and hault
To wrong the weaker, oft falles in his owne affault.

Then turning backe vnto that gentle boy,
Which had himfelfe so stoutly well acquit ;
Seeing his face so louely sterne and coy,
And hearing th' answeres of his pregnant wit,
He / prayfd it much, and much admyred it ;
That sure he weend him borne of noble blood,
With whom those graces did so goodly fit :
And when he long had him beholding stood, 220
He burst into these words, as to him seemed good.

Faire gentle swayne, and yet as stout as fayre,
That in these woods amōgst the Nymphs dost wonne,
Which daily may to thy sweete lookes repayre,
As they are wont vnto *Latonaes* sonne,
After his chace on woodie *Cynthus* donne :
Well may I certes such an one thee read,
As by thy worth thou worthily hast wonne,
Or surely borne of some Heroicke fead,
That in thy face appeares and gracious goodly head.

But should it not displease thee it to tell ; 231
(Vnlesse thou in these woods thy selfe conceale,
For loue amongst the woodie Gods to dwell ;)
I would thy selfe require thee to reueale,
For deare affection and vnfayned zeale,
Which to thy noble personage I beare,
And with thee grow in worship and great weale.
For since the day that armes I first did reare,
I neuer saw in any greater hope appeare.

To whom then thus the noble youth ; may be 240
 Sir knight, that by discouering my estate,
 Harme may arise vnweeting vnto me ;
 Nathelesse, fith ye so courteous seemed late,
 To you I will not feare it to relate.
 Then wote ye that I am a Briton borne,
 Sonne of a King, how euer thorough fate
 Or fortune I my countrie haue forlorne, (adorne.)
 And lost the crowne, which should my head by right

And *Tristram* is my name, the onely heire
 Of good king *Meliogras* which did rayne 250
 In Cornewale, till that he through liues despeire
 Vntimely dyde, before I did attaine
 Ripe yeares of reason, my right to maintaine.
 After whose death, his brother seeing mee
 An infant, weake a kingdome to sustaine,
 Vpon him tooke the roiall high degrec,
 And sent me, where him list, instructed for to bee.

The widow Queene my mother, which then hight
 Faire *Emiline*, conceiuing then great feare
 Of my fraile safetie, resting in the might 260
 Of him, that did the kingly Scepter beare,
 Whose gealous dread induring not a peare,
 Is wont to cut off all, that doubt may breed,
 Thought best away me to remoue somewhere
 Into some forrein land, where as no need
 Of dreaded daunger might his doubtfull humor feed.

So taking counsell of a wife man red,
 She was by him aduiz'd, to send me quight

Out of the countrie wherein I was bred,
The which the fertile *Lionesse* is hight, 270
Into the land of *Faerie*, where no wight
Should weet of me, nor worke me any wrong.
To whose wife read she hearkning, sent me streight
Into this land, where I haue wond thus long,
Since I was ten yeares old, now growen to stature
strong.

All which my daies I haue not lewdly spent,
Nor spilt the bloffome of my tender yeares
In ydleffe, but as was conuenient,
Haue trayned bene with many noble feres
In / gentle thewes, and such like seemely leres. 280
Mongst which my most delight hath alwaies been,
To hunt the saluage chace amongst my peres,
Of all that raungeth in the forrest greene ;
Of which none is to me vnknowne, that eu'r was seene.

Ne is there hauke, which mantleth her on pearch,
Whether high tousing, or accoasting low,
But I the measure of her flight doe search,
And all her pray, and all her diet know.
Such be our ioyes, which in these forrests grow :
Onely the vse of armes, which most I ioy, 290
And fitteth most for noble swayne to know,
I haue not tasted yet, yet past a boy,
And being now high time these strong ioynts to employ.

Therefore, good Sir, fith now occasion fit
Doth fall, whose like hereafter seldome may,

l. 269, , removed after '*countrie*': l. 272, .—accepted.

Let me this craue, vnworthy though of it,
 That ye will make me Squire without delay,
 That from henceforth in batteilous array
 I may beare armes, and learne to vse them right ;
 The rather since that fortune hath this day 3
 Giuen to me the spoile of this dead knight,
 These goodly gilden armes, which I haue won in figt

All which when well Sir *Calidore* had heard,
 Him much more now, then earst he gan admire,
 For the rare hope which in his yeares appear'd,
 And thus replide ; faire chyld, the high desire
 To loue of armes, which in you doth aspire,
 I may not certes without blame denie ;
 But rather wish, that some more noble hire,
 (Though none more noble then is cheualrie,) 3
 I had, you to reward with greater dignitie. /

There him he causd to kneele, and made to sweare
 Faith to his knight, and truth to Ladies all,
 And neuer to be recreant, for feare
 Of perill, or of ought that might befall :
 So he him dubbed, and his Squire did call.
 Full glad and ioyous then young *Tristram* grew,
 Like as a flowre, whose filken leaues small,
 Long shut vp in the bud from heauens vew.
 At length breakes forth, and brode displayes his smyli
 hew. 3

Thus when they long had treated to and fro,
 And *Calidore* betooke him to depart,
 Chyld *Tristram* prayd, that he with him might go
 On his aduenture, vowing not to start,

But wayt on him in euey place and part.
 Whereat Sir *Calidore* did much delight,
 And greatly ioy'd at his so noble hart,
 In hope he fure would proue a doughtie knight :
 Yet for the time this answere he to him behight.

Glad would I surely be, thou courteous Squire, 330
 To haue thy presence in my present quest,
 That mote thy kindled courage set on fire,
 And flame forth honour in thy noble brest :
 But I am bound by vow, which I profest
 To dread my Soueraine, when I it assayed,
 That in atchieuement of her high behest
 I should no creature ioynе vnto mine ayde,
 For thy I may not graunt, that ye so greatly prayde.

But since this Ladie is all desolate,
 And needeth safegard now vpon her way, 340
 Ye may doe well in this her needfull state
 To succour her, from daunger of difmay ;
 That / thankfull guerdon may to you repay.
 The noble ympe of such new seruice fayne,
 It gladly did accept, as he did say.
 So taking courteous leaue, they parted twayne,
 And *Calidore* forth passed to his former payne.

But *Tristram* then despoyling that dead knight
 Of all those goodly implements of prayse,
 Long fed his greedie eyes with the faire fight 350
 Of the bright mettall, shyning like Sunne rayes ;
 Handling and turning them a thousand wayes.

And after hauing them vpon him dight,
 He tooke that Ladie, and her vp did rayse
 Vpon the steed of her owne late dead knight :
 So with her marched forth, as she did him beight.

There to their fortune leaue we them awhile,
 And turne we backe to good Sir *Calidore* ;
 Who ere he thence had traueild many a mile,
 Came to the place, whereas ye heard afore 360
 This knight, whom *Tristram* slew, had wounded fore
 Another knight in his despiteous pryde ;
 There he that knight found lying on the flore,
 With many wounds full perilous and wyde,
 That all his garments, and the graspe in vermeill dyde.

And there beside him fate vpon the ground
 His wofull Ladie, piteously complayning
 With loud laments that most vnluckie stound,
 And her sad selfe with carefull hand constrayning
 To wype his wounds, and ease their bitter payning.
 Which forie fight when *Calidore* did vew 370
 With heaueie eyne, from teares vneath refrayning,
 His mightie hart their mournfull case can rew,
 And for their better comfort to them nigher drew. /

Then speaking to the Ladie, thus he sayd :
 Ye dolefull Dame, let not your grieffe empeach
 To tell, what cruell hand hath thus arayd
 This knight vnarm'd, with so vnknighly breach
 Of armes, that if I yet him nigh may reach,
 I may auenge him of so foule despight. 380
 The Ladie hearing his so courteous speach,

l. 355, : for,—accepted.

Gan reare her eyes as to the chearefull light,
And from her fory hart few heaueie words forth fight.

In which she shew'd, how that discourteous knight
(Whom *Tristram* slew) them in that shadow found,
Ioying together in vnblam'd delight,
And him vnarm'd, as now he lay on ground,
Charg'd with his speare and mortally did wound,
Withouten cause, but onely her to reauē
From him, to whom she was for euer bound : 390
Yet when she fled into that couert greaue,
He her not finding, both them thus nigh dead did leaue.

When *Calidore* this ruefull storie had
Well vnderstood, he gan of her demand,
What manner wight he was, and how yclad,
Which had this outrage wrought with wicked hand.
She then, like as she best could vnderstand,
Him thus describ'd, to be of stature large,
Clad all in gilden armes, with azure band
Quartred athwart, and bearing in his targe 400
A Ladie on rough waues, row'd in a sommer barge.

Then gan Sir *Calidore* to ghesse streightway
By many signes which she described had,
That this was he, whom *Tristram* earst did slay,
And to her said ; Dame be no longer sad :
For / he, that hath your Knight so ill bestad,
Is now him selfe in much more wretched plight ;
These eyes him saw vpon the cold earth sprad,

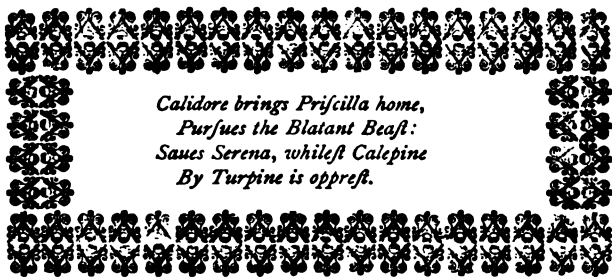
The meede of his desert for that despight,
Which to your selfe he wrought, & to your loued knight.

Therefore faire Lady lay aside this griefe, 411
Which ye haue gathered to your gentle hart,
For that displeasure ; and thinke what reliefe
Where best deuise for this your louers smart,
And how ye may him hence, and to what part
Conuay to be recur'd. She thank't him deare,
Both for that newes he did to her impart,
And for the courteous care, which he did beare
Both to her loue ; and to her selfe in that sad dreare.

Yet could she not deuise by any wit, 420
How thence she might conuay him to some place.
For him to trouble she it thought vnfit,
That was a straunger to her wretched case ;
And him to beare, she thought it thing too base.
Which when as he perceiu'd, he thus bespake ;
Faire Lady let it not you seeme disgrace,
To beare this burden on your dainty backe ;
My selfe will beare a part, coportion of your packe.

So off he did his shield, and downeward layd
Vpon the ground, like to an hollow beare ; 430
And pourcing balme, which he had long puruayd,
Into his wounds, him vp thereon did reare,
And twixt them both with parted paines did beare,
Twixt life and death, not knowing what was donne.
Thence they him carried to a Castle neare,
In which a worthy auncient Knight did wonne :
Where what ensu'd, shall in next Canto be begonne. /

Cant. III.



TRue is, that whilome that good Poet fayd,
 The gentle minde by gentle deeds is knowne.
 For man by nothing is so well bewrayd,
 As by his manners, in which plaine is showne
 Of what degree and what race he is growne. 10
 For feldome seene, a trotting Stalion get
 An ambling Colt, that is his proper owne :
 So feldome seene, that one in basenefse set
 Doth noble courage shew, with curteous manners met.

But euermore contrary hath bene tryde,
 That gentle blood will gentle manners breed ;
 As well may be in *Calidore* descryde,
 By late enfample of that courteous deed,
 Done to that wounded Knight in his great need,
 Whom on his backe he bore, till he him brought 20
 Vnto the Castle where they had decreed.

l. 4, , after '*Serena*'—accepted : l. 8, 'a' before '*man*' in 1596 and 1609 is superfluous ; removed in 1679.

There of the Knight, the which that Caste ought,
To make abode that night he greatly was befought.

He was to weete a man of full ripe yeares,
That in his youth had beene of mickle might,
And borne great sway in armes amongst his peares :
But now weake age had dimd his candle light.
Yet / was he courteous still to euey wight,
And loued all that did to armes incline.
And was the father of that wounded Knight, 30
Whom *Calidore* thus carried on his chine,
And *Aldus* was his name, and his sonnes *Aladine*.

Who when he saw his sonne so ill bedight,
With bleeding wounds, brought home vpon a Beare
By a faire Lady, and a straunger Knight,
Was inly touched with compassion deare,
And deare affection of so dolefull dreare,
That he these words burst forth ; Ah fory boy,
Is this the hope that to my hoary heare
Thou brings ? aie me, is this the timely ioy, 40
Which I expected long, now turnd to sad annoy ?

Such is the weakenesse of all mortall hope ;
So tickle is the state of earthly things,
That ere they come vnto their aymed scope,
They fall too short of our fraile reckonings,
And bring vs bale and bitter sorrowings,
In stead of comfort, which we should embrace :
This is the state of Keafars and of Kings.
Let none therefore, that is in meaner place,
Too greatly grieve at any his vn lucky case.

So well and wifely did that good old Knight
Temper his grieſe, and turned it to cheare,
To cheare his gueſts, whom he had ſtayd that night,
And make their welcome to them well appeare :
That to Sir *Calidore* was eaſie geare ;
But that faire Lady would be cheard for nought,
But figh'd and ſorrow'd for her loue deare,
And inly did afflict her penſiue thought, (brought. /
With thinking to what caſe her name ſhould now be

For ſhe was daughter to a noble Lord, 60
Which dwelt thereby, who fought her to affy
To a great pere ; but ſhe did diſaccord,
Ne could her liking to his loue apply,
But lou'd this freſh young Knight, who dwelt her ny,
The luſty *Aladine*, though meaner borne,
And of leſſe liuelood and hability,
Yet full of valour, the which did adorne
His meaneſſe much, & make her th'others riches ſcorne.

So hauing both found fit occaſion,
They met together in that luckeleſſe glade ; 70
Where that proud Knight in his presumption
The gentle *Aladine* did earſt inuade,
Being vnarm'd, and ſet in ſecret ſhade.
Whereof ſhe now bethinking, gan t'aduize,
How great a hazard ſhe at earſt had made
Of her good fame, and further gan deuize,
How ſhe the blame might ſalue with coloured diſguize.

But *Calidore* with all good courtſie
Fain'd her to frolicke, and to put away

The penfiue fit of her melancholie ; 80
 And that old Knight by all meanes did assay,
 To make them both as merry as he may.
 So they the euening past, till time of rest,
 When *Calidore* in seemly good array
 Vnto his bowre was brought, and there vndrest,
 Did sleepe all night through weary trauell of his quest.

But faire *Priscilla* (so that Lady hight)
 Would to no bed, nor take no kindly sleepe,
 But by her wounded loue did watch all night,
 And all the night for bitter anguish weepe, 90
 And / with her teares his wounds did wash and sleepe.
 So well she washt them, and so well she watcht him,
 That of the deadly ffound, in which full deepe
 He drenched was, she at the length dispacht him,
 And droue away the ffound, which mortally attacht him.

The morrow next, when day gan to vplooke,
 He also gan vplooke with drery eye,
 Like one that out of deadly dreame awooke :
 Where when he saw his faire *Priscilla* by,
 He deeply sigh'd, and groaned inwardly, 100
 To thinke of this ill state, in which she stood,
 To which she for his sake had weetingly
 Now brought her selfe, and blam'd her noble blood :
 For first, next after life, he tendered her good.

Which she perceiuing, did with plenteous teares
 His care more then her owne compaffionate,

Forgetfull of her owne, to minde his feares :
So both conspiring, gan to intimate
Each others grieve with zeale affectionate,
And twixt them twaine with equall care to cast, 110
How to saue hole her hazarded estate ;
For which the onely helpe now left them last
Seem'd to be *Calidore* : all other helpes were past.

Him they did deeme, as sure to them he seemed,
A courteous Knight, and full of faithfull trust :
Therefore to him their cause they best esteemed
Whole to commit, and to his dealing iust.
Earely, so soone as *Titans* beames forth brust
Through the thicke clouds, in which they steeped lay
All night in darkeness, duld with yron rust, 120
Calidore rising vp as fresh as day,
Gan freshly him addresse vnto his former way. /

But first him seemed fit, that wounded Knight
To visite, after this nights perillous passe,
And to salute him, if he were in plight,
And eke that Lady his faire louely lasse.
There he him found much better then he was,
And moued speach to him of things of course,
The anguish of his paine to ouerpasse :
Mongst which he namely did to him discourse, 130
Of former daies mishap, his sorrowes wicked course.

Of which occasion *Aldine* taking hold,
Gan breake to him the fortunes of his loue,
And all his disadventures to vnfold ;
That *Calidore* it dearly deepe did moue.

In th'end his kyndly courtesie to proue,
 He him by all the bands of loue befought,
 And as it mote a faithfull friend behoue,
 To safe conduct his loue, and not for ought
 To leaue, till to her fathers house he had her brought.

Sir *Calidore* his faith thereto did plight, 141
 It to performe: so after little stay,
 That she her felfe had to the iourney dight,
 He passed forth with her in faire array,
 Feareleffe, who ought did thinke, or ought did say,
 Sith his own thought he knew most cleare from wite.
 So as they past together on their way,
 He can deuize this counter-cast of flight,
 To giue faire colour to that Ladies cause in fight.

Streight to the carkasse of that Knight he went, 150
 The cause of all this euill, who was flaine
 The day before by iust auengement
 Of noble *Triftram*, where it did remaine:
 There / he the necke thereof did cut in twaine,
 And tooke with him the head, the signe of shame.
 So forth he passed thorough that daies paine,
 Till to that Ladies fathers house he came;
 Most pensiue man, through feare, what of his childe be-
 came.

There he arriuing boldly, did present
 The fearefull Lady to her father deare, 160
 Most perfect pure, and guiltlesse innocent
 Of blame, as he did on his Knighthood sweare,

Since first he saw her, and did free from feare
Of a discourteous Knight, who her had rest,
And by outrageous force away did beare :
Witnesse thereof he shew'd his head there left,
And wretched life forlorne for vengeance of his theft.

Most ioyfull man her fire was her to fee,
And heare th'adventure of her late mischaunce ;
And thousand thanks to *Calidore* for fee 170
Of his large paines in her deliuerance
Did yeeld ; Ne lesse the Lady did aduance.
Thus hauing her restored trustily,
As he had vow'd, some small continuance
He there did make, and then most carefully
Vnto his first exploite he did him selfe apply.

So as he was pursuing of his quest
He chaunst to come whereas a iolly Knight,
In couert shade him selfe did safely rest,
To solace with his Lady in delight : 180
His warlike armes he had from him vndight ;
For that him selfe he thought from daunger free,
And far from enuious eyes that mote him spight.
And eke the Lady was full faire to see,
And courteous withall, becomming her degree. /

To whom Sir *Calidore* approaching nye,
Ere they were well aware of liuing wight,
Them much abasht, but more him selfe thereby,
That he so rudely did vpon them light,
And troubled had their quiet loues delight. 190
Yet since it was his fortune, not his fault,
Him selfe thereof he labour'd to acquite,

And pardon crau'd for his so rash assault,
That he gainst courtesie so fowly did default.

With which his gentle words and goodly wit
He soone allayd that Knights conceiu'd displeasure,
That he befought him downe by him to fit,
That they mote treat of things abroad at leasure ;
And of aduentures, which had in his measure
Of so long waies to him befallen late. 200
So downe he fate, and with delightfull pleasure
His long aduentures gan to him relate,
Which he endured had through dangerous debate.

Of which whilest they discourfed both together,
The faire *Serena* (so his Lady hight)
Allur'd with myldnesse of the gentle wether,
And pleasaunce of the place, the which was dight
With diuers flowres distinct with rare delight ;
Wandred about the fields, as liking led
Her wauering lust after her wandring sight, 210
To make a garland to adorne her hed,
Without suspect of ill or daungers hidden dred.

All sodainely out of the forrest nere
The *Blatant Beast* forth rushing vnaware,
Caught her thus loosely wandring here and there,
And in his wide great mouth away her bare.
Crying / aloud to shew her sad misfare
Vnto the Knights, and calling oft for ayde ;
Who with the horror of her haplesse care

l. 193, '*assault*'—Collier's correction of the obvious error of '*default*' twice in '96 and 1609 : l. 217, '*in vuine*' after '*aloud*' : l. 218, ; for,—accepted.

Haftily starting vp, like men difmayde, 220
Ran after faft, to refkue the diftrefsed mayde.

The Beaft with their purfuit incited more,
Into the wood was bearing her apace
For to haue fpoyled her, when *Calidore*
Who was more light of foote and fwift in chace,
Him ouertooke in middeft of his race :
And fiercely charging him with all his might,
Forft to forgoe his pray there in the place,
And to betake him felfe to fearefull flight ;
For he durft not abide with *Calidore* to fight. 230

Who natheleffe, when he the Lady faw
There left on ground, though in full euill plight,
Yet knowing that her Knight now neare did draw,
Staide not to succour her in that affright,
But follow'd faft the Monfter in his flight :
Through woods and hils he follow'd him fo faft,
That he nould let him breath nor gather fpright,
But forft him gape and gaspe, with dread aghaft,
As if his lungs and lites were nigh a funder braft.

And now by this Sir *Calepine* (fo hight) 240
Came to the place, where he his Lady found
In dolorous difmay and deadly plight,
All in gore bloud there tumbled on the ground,
Hauing both fides through grypt with griefly wound.
His weapons foone from him he threw away,
And flouping downe to her in drery ffound,

Vprear'd her from the ground, whereon she lay,
And in his tender armes her forced vp to stay. /

So well he did his busie paines apply,
That the faint sprite he did reuoke againe, 250
To her fraile mansion of mortality.
Then vp he tooke her twixt his armes twaine,
And setting on his steede, her did sustaine
With carefull hands soft footing her beside,
Till to some place of rest they mote attaine,
Where she in safe assuraunce mote abide,
Till she recured were of those her woundes wide.

Now when as *Phæbus* with his fiery waine
Vnto his Inne began to draw apace ;
Tho waxing weary of that toylefome paine, 260
In traueilling on foote so long a space,
Not wont on foote with heauy arms to trace,
Downe in a dale forby a riuers syde,
He chaunst to spie a faire and stately place,
To which he meant his weary sleps to guyde,
In hope there for his loue some succour to prouyde.

But comming to the riuers side, he found
That hardly passable on foote it was :
Therefore there still he stood as in a stound,
Ne wist which way he through the foord mote pas.
Thus whilest he was in this distressed case, 271
Deuising what to doe, he nigh espyde
An armed Knight approaching to the place,

l. 254, 'soft footing'—obvious correction of 'softing foot' of '96 and 1609 from 1679.

With a faire Lady lincked by his fyde,
The which themfelues prepard thorough the foord to ride.

Whom *Calepine* faluting (as became)
Besought of courtesie in that his neede,
For safe conducting of his sickely Dame,
Through that same perillous foord with better heede,
To / take him vp behinde vpon his steed : 280
To whom that other did this taunt returne.
Perdy thou peasant Knight, mightst rightly reed
Me then to be full base and euill borne,
If I would beare behinde a burden of such scorne.

But as thou hast thy steed forlorne with shame,
So fare on foote till thou another gayne,
And let thy Lady likewise doe the same,
Or beare her on thy backe with pleasing payne,
And proue thy manhood on the billowes vayne.
With which rude speach his Lady much displeased,
Did him reproue, yet could him not restrayne, 291
And would on her owne Palfrey him haue eased,
For pittie of his Dame, whom she saw so diseased.

Sir *Calepine* her thanckt, yet inly wroth
Against her Knight, her gentlenesse refused,
And carelesly into the riuier goth,
As in despight to be so fowle abused
Of a rude churle, whom often he accused
Of fowle discourtesie, vnfit for Knight ;
And strongly wading through the waues vnused, 300

l. 275, '*thorough*' (1609)—accepted for '*through*': ll. 278-9 within () : l. 280, : for ,—accepted : l. 299, ; accepted, and so l. 304.

With speare in th'one hand, stayd him self vpright,
With th'other staide his Lady vp with steddý might.

And all the while, that fame discourteous Knight,
Stood on the further bancke beholding him ;
At whose calamity, for more despight
He laught, and mockt to see him like to swim.
But when as *Calepine* came to the brim,
And saw his carriage past that perill well,
Looking at that same Carle with count'nance grim,
His heart with vengeaunce inwardly did swell, 310
And forth at last did breake in speeches sharpe and fell/

Vnknighly Knight, the blemish of that name,
And blot of all that armes vpon them take,
Which is the badge of honour and of fame,
Loe I defie thee, and here challenge make,
That thou for euer doe those armes forsake ;
And be for euer held a recreant Knight,
Vnlesse thou dare for thy deare Ladies sake,
And for thine owne defence on foote alight,
To iustifie thy fault gainst me in equall fight. 320

The dastard, that did heare him selfe defyde,
Seem'd not to weigh his threatfull words at all,
But laught them out, as if his greater pryde,
Did scorne the challenge of so base a thrall :
Or had no courage, or else had no gall.
So much the more was *Calepine* offended,
That him to no reuenge he forth could call,

1. 314, 'Which'—Dr. Morris mistakenly says '96 reads 'that' here.

But both his challenge and himfelfe contemned
Ne cared as a coward fo to be condemned.

But he nought weighing what he fayd or did, 330
Turned his fteede about another way,
And with his Lady to the Caſtle rid,
Where was his won ; ne did the other ſtay,
But after went directly as he may,
For his ficke charge ſome harbour there to ſeeke ;
Where he arriuing with the fall of day,
Drew to the gate, and there with prayers meeke,
And myld entreaty, lodging did for her befeeke.

But the rude Porter, that no manners had,
Did ſhut the gate againſt him in his face, 340
And entraunce boldly vnto him forbad.
Natheleſſe the Knight now in ſo needy caſe,
Gan / him entreat euen with ſubmiſſion baſe,
And humbly praid to let them in that night :
Who to him aunſwer'd, that there was no place
Of lodging fit for any errant Knight,
Vnleſſe that with his Lord he formerly did fight.

Full loth am I (quoth he) as now at earſt,
When day is ſpent, and reſt vs needeth moſt,
And that this Lady, both whoſe ſides are pearſt 350
With wounds, is ready to forgo the gholt :
Ne would I gladly combate with mine hoſt,
That ſhould to me ſuch curteſie afford,
Vnleſſe that I were thereunto enforſt.

l. 338, , accepted ; and ſo l. 339.

But yet aread to me, how hight thy Lord,
That doth thus strongly ward the Castle of the ford.

His name (quoth he) if that thou list to learne,
Is hight Sir *Turpine*, one of mickle might,
And manhood rare, but terrible and stearne
In all affaies to euey errant Knight, 360
Because of one, that wrought him fowle despight.
Ill seemes (sayd he) if he so valiaunt be,
That he should be so sterne to stranger wight :
For feldome yet did liuing creature see,
That curtesie and manhood euer disagree.

But go thy waies to him, and fro me say,
That here is at his gate an errant Knight,
That house-rome craues, yet would be loth t'assay
The prooffe of battell, now in doubtfull night,
Or curtesie with rudenesse to requite : 370
Yet if he needes will fight, craue leaue till morne,
And tell with all, the lamentable plight,
In which this Lady languisheth forlorne,
That pittie craues, as he of woman was yborne. /

The groome went streight way in, and to his Lord
Declar'd the message, which that Knight did moue ;
Who fitting with his Lady then at bord,
Not onely did not his demaund reproue,
But both himselfe reuil'd, and eke his loue ;
Albe his Lady, that *Blandina* hight, 380
Him of vngentle vsage did approue

l. 372, (*withall*) : l. 381, '*reprove*.' See Glosseary, s.v. '*approu*.'

And earnestly entreated that they might
Finde fauour to be lodged there for that fame night.

Yet would he not perfwaded be for ought,
Ne from his currish will awhit reclame.
Which anſwer when the groome returning, brought
To *Calepine*, his heart did inly flame
With wrathfull fury for ſo foule a ſhame,
That he could not thereof auenged bee :
But moſt for pittie of his deareſt Dame, 390
Whom now in deadly daunger he did ſee ;
Yet had no meanes to comfort, nor procure her glee.

But all in vaine ; for why, no remedy
He ſaw, the preſent miſchiefe to redreſſe,
But th'vtmoſt end perforce for to aby,
Which that nights fortune would for him addreſſe.
So downe he tooke his Lady in diſtreſſe,
And layd her vnderneath a buſh to ſleepe,
Couer'd with cold, and wrapt in wretchedneſſe,
Whiles he him ſelfe all night did nought but weepe,
And wary watch about her for her ſafegard keepe. 401

The morrow next, ſo ſoone as ioyous day
Did ſhew it ſelfe in funny beames bedight,
Serena full of dolorous diſmay,
Twixt darkeneſſe dread, and hope of liuing light,
Vprear'd / her head to ſee that chearefull fight.
Then *Calepine*, how euer inly wroth,
And greedy to auenge that vile deſpight,
Yet for the feeble Ladies ſake, full loth 409
To make there lenger ſtay, forth on his iourney goth.

He goth on foote all armed by her fide,
 Vpftaying ftill her felfe vppon her fteede,
 Being vnhabable elfe alone to ride ;
 So fore her fides, fo much her wounds did bleede :
 Till that at length, in his extreameft neede,
 He chaunft far off an armed Knight to fpy,
 Purfuing him apace with greedy fpeede,
 Whom well he wift to be fome enemy,
 That meant to make aduantage of his mifery.

Wherefore he ftayd, till that he nearer drew, 420
 To weet what iffue would thereof betyde,
 Tho whenas he approched nigh in vew,
 By certaine fignes he plainly him defcryde,
 To be the man, that with fuch fcornfull pryde
 Had him abusde, and fhamed yefterday ;
 Therefore mifdoubting, leaft he fhould mifguyde
 His former malice to fome new affay,
 He caft to keepe him felfe fo fafely as he may.

By this the other came in place likewife,
 And couching clofe his fpeare and all his powre, 430
 As bent to fome malicious enterprife,
 He bad him ftand, t'abide the bitter ftoure
 Of his fore vengeance, or to make auoure
 Of the lewd words and deedes, which he had done :
 With that ran at him, as he would deuoure
 His life attonce ; who nought could do, but fhun
 The perill of his pride, or elfe be ouerrun. /

Yet he him ftill purfew'd from place to place,
 With full intent him cruelly to kill ;

l. 430, 'and all'—Dr. Morris queries 'with ali.'

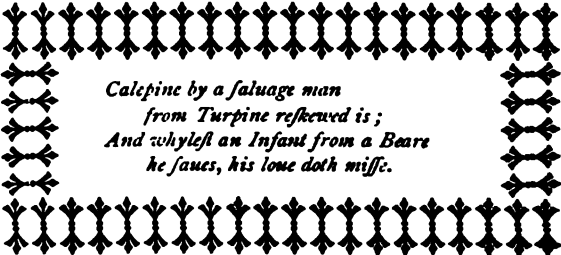
And like a wilde goate round about did chace, 440
Flying the fury of his bloody will.
But his best succour and refuge was still
Behinde his Ladies backe ; who to him cryde,
And called oft with prayers loud and shrill,
As euer he to Lady was affyde,
To spare her Knight, and rest with reason pacifyde.

But he the more thereby enraged was,
And with more eager felnesse him pursew'd :
So that at length, after long weary chace,
Hauing by chaunce a close aduantage vew'd, 450
He ouer raught him, hauing long eschew'd
His violence in vaine, and with his spere
Strooke through his shoulder, that the blood enfew'd
In great aboundance, as a well it were,
That forth out of an hill fresh gushing did appere.

Yet ceast he not for all that cruell wound,
But chaste him still, for all his Ladies cry ;
Not satisfyde till on the fatall ground
He saw his life powrd forth despiteously :
The which was certes in great ieopardy, 460
Had not a wondrous chaunce his reskue wrought,
And faued from his cruell villany.
Such chaunces oft exceed all humaine thought :
That in another Canto shall to end be brought.

l. 439, ; for, --accepted ; and so ll. 443, 458 : l. 448, : for, --accepted.

Cant. / IIII.



*Calepine by a saluage man
from Turpine rescued is ;
And whylest an Infant from a Beare
he saues, his lome doth misse.*

Like as a ship with dreadfull storme long toft,
Hauing spent all her mastes and her ground-hold,
Now farre from harbour likely to be lost,
At last some fisher barke doth neare behold,
That giueth comfort to her courage cold. 10
Such was the state of this most courteous knight
Being oppressed by that faytour bold,
That he remayned in most perilous plight,
And his sad Ladie left in pitifull affright.

Till that by fortune, passing all foresight,
A saluage man, which in those woods did wonne,
Drawne with that Ladies loud and piteous shrighr,
Toward the same incessantly did ronne,
To vnderstand what there was to be donne.
There he this most discourteous crauen found, 20
As fiercely yet, as when he first begonne,

l. 3, ; for,—accepted.

Chafing the gentle *Calepine* around,
Ne sparing him the more for all his gricuous wound.

The saluage man, that neuer till this houre
Did taste of pittie, neither gentleffe knew,
Seeing his sharpe assault and cruell stoure
Was much emmoued at his perils vew, /
That euen his ruder hart began to rew,
And feele compassion of his euill plight
Against his foe, that did him so purfew : 30
From whom he meant to free him, if he might,
And him auenge of that so villenous despight.

Yet armes or weapon had he none to fight,
Ne knew the vse of warlike instruments,
Saue such as sudden rage him lent to smite,
But naked without needfull vestiments,
To clad his corpse with meete habiliments,
He cared not for dint of sword nor speere,
No more then for the stroke of strawes or bents :
For from his mothers wombe, which him did beare
He was invulnerable made by Magicke leare. 41

He stayed not t'aduize, which way were best
His foe t'affayle, or how himfelfe to gard,
But with fierce fury and with force infest
Vpon him ran ; who being well prepard,
His first assault full warily did ward,
And with the push of his sharp-pointed speare
Full on the breast him strooke, so strong and hard,
That forst him backe recoyle, and reele areare ;
Yet in his bodie made no wound nor bloud appeare. 50

With that the wyld man more enraged grew,
 Like to a Tygre that hath mist his pray,
 And with mad mood againe vpon him flew,
 Regarding neither speare, that mote him slay,
 Nor his fierce steed, that mote him much dismay.
 The saluage nation doth all dread despize :
 Tho on his shield he griple hold did lay,
 And held the same so hard, that by no wize
 He could him force to loofe, or leaue his enterprize.

Long / did he wrest and wring it to and fro, 60
 And euery way did try, but all in vaine :
 For he would not his greedie grype forgoe,
 But hayld and puld with all his might and maine,
 That from his steed him nigh he drew againe.
 Who hauing now no vse of his long speare,
 So nigh at hand, nor force his shield to straine,
 Both speare and shield, as things that needlesse were,
 He quite forsooke, and fled himselfe away for feare.

But after him the wyld man ran apace
 And him purfewed with importune speed, 70
 (For he was swift as any Bucke in chace)
 And had he not in his extreamest need,
 Bene helped through the swiftnesse of his steed,
 He had him ouertaken in his flight.
 Who euer, as he saw him nigh succeed,
 Gan cry aloud with horrible affright,
 And shrieked out ; a thing vncomely for a knight.

But when the Saluage saw his labour vaine,
 In following of him, that fled so fast,

l. 63, 'haſd': l. 77, ; for,—accepted.

He wearie woxe, and backe return'd againe 80
With speede vnto the place, whereas he last
Had left that couple, nere their vtmost cast.
There he that knight full forely bleeding found
And eke the Ladie fearefully aghast,
Both for the perill of the present stound,
And also for the sharpnesse of her rankling wound.

For though she were right glad, so rid to bee
From that vile lozell, which her late offended,
Yet now no lesse encombrance she did see,
And perill by this saluage man pretended ; / 90
Gainst whom she saw no meanes to be defended,
By reason that her knight was wounded fore.
Therefore her selfe she wholly recommended
To Gods sole grace, whom she did oft implore,
To send her succour, being of all hope forlore.

But the wyld man, contrarie to her feare,
Came to her creeping like a fawning hound,
And by rude tokens made to her appeare
His deepe compassion of her dolefull stound,
Kissing his hands, and crouching to the ground ; 100
For other language had he none nor speech,
But a soft murmure, and confused sound
Of senselesse words, which nature did him teach,
T'expresse his passions, which his reason did empeach.

And comming likewise to the wounded knight,
When he beheld the streames of purple blood
Yet flowing fresh, as moued with the sight,
He made great mone after his saluage mood :

And running streight into the thickest wood,
 A certaine herbe from thence vnto him brought, 110
 Whose vertue he by vse well vnderstood :
 The iuyce whereof into his wound he wrought,
 And stopt the bleeding straight, ere he it staunched
 thought.

Then taking vp that Recreants shield and speare,
 Which earst he left, he signes vnto them made,
 With him to wend vnto his winning neare :
 To which he easily did them perfwade,
 Farre in the forrest by a hollow glade,
 Couered with moffie shrubs, which spreading brode
 Did vnderneath them make a gloomy shade ; 120
 There foot of liuing creature neuer trode,
 Ne scarfe wyld beafts durst come, there was this wights
 abode.

Thether / he brought these vnaacquainted guests ;
 To whom faire semblance, as he could, he shewed
 By signes, by lookes, and all his other gests.
 But the bare ground, with hoarie mosse bestrowed,
 Must be their bed ; their pillow was vnfowed,
 And the frutes of the forrest was their feast :
 For their bad Stuard neither plough'd nor fowed,
 Ne fed on flesh, ne euer of wyld beast 130
 Did taste the bloud, obaying natures first behest.

Yet howfocuer base and meane it were,
 They tooke it well, and thanked God for all,

l. 117, (.)—accepted : l. 121, 'Where': *ib.*, 'troade' : l. 123, 'Thither':
 l. 127, ; for,—accepted.

Which had them freed from that deadly feare,
And sau'd from being to that caytiue thrall.
Here they of force (as fortune now did fall)
Compelled were themselues a while to rest,
Glad of that easement, though it were but small ;
That hauing there their wounds a while redrest,
They mote the abler be to passe vnto the rest. 140

During which time, that wyld man did apply
His best endeuour, and his daily paine,
In seeking all the woods both farre and nye
For herbes to dresse their wounds; still seeming faine
When ought he did, that did their lyking gaine.
So as ere long he had that knightes wound
Recured well, and made him whole againe :
But that same Ladies hurts no herbe he found,
Which could redresse, for it was inwardly vnfound.

Now when as *Calepine* was woxen strong, 150
Vpon a day he cast abroad to wend,
To take the ayre, and heare the thrushes song,
Vnarm'd, as fearing neither foe nor frend, /
And without sword his person to defend.
There him befell, vnlooked for before,
An hard aduenture with vnhappie end ;
A cruell Beare, the which an infant bore
Betwixt his bloodie iawes, besprinckled all with gore.

The litle babe did loudly scrike and squall,
And all the woods with piteous plaints did fill, 160

l. 135, 'captive': l. 148, 'hurt': l. 156, ; for,—accepted: l. 159, 'scricke.'

As if his cry did meane for helpe to call
 To *Calepine*, whose eares those shrieches shrill
 Percing his hart with pities point did thrill ;
 That after him, he ran with zealous haste,
 To rescue th'infant, ere he did him kill :
 Whom though he saw now somewhat ouerpast,
 Yet by the cry he follow'd, and purfewed fast.

Well then him chaunst his heauy armes to want,
 Whose burden mote empeach his needfull speed,
 And hinder him from libertie to pant : 170
 For hauing long time, as his daily weed,
 Them wont to weare, and wend on foot for need,
 Now wanting them he felt himfelfe so light,
 That like an Hauke, which feeling her selfe freed
 From bels and iesses, which did let her flight,
 Him seem'd his feet did fly, and in their speed delight.

So well he sped him, that the wearie Beare
 Ere long he ouertooke, and forst to stay,
 And without weapon him assaying neare,
 Compeld him foone the spoyle adowne to lay.
 Wherewith the beaft enrag'd to loose his pray, 181
 Vpon him turned, and with greedie force
 And furie, to be crossed in his way,
 Gaping full wyde, did thinke without remorse
 To be aueng'd on him, and to deuoure his corse.

But / the bold knight no whit thereat difmayd,
 But catching vp in hand a ragged stone,

Which lay thereby (so fortune him did ayde)
Vpon him ran, and thrust it all attone
Into his gaping throte, that made him grone 190
And gaspe for breath, that he nigh choked was,
Being vnable to digest that bone ;
Ne could it vpward come, nor downward passe,
Ne could he brooke the coldnesse of the stony masse.

Whom when as he thus combred did behold,
Stryuing in vaine that nigh his bowels braft,
He with him clofd, and laying mightie hold
Vpon his throte, did gripe his gorge so fast,
That wanting breath, him downe to ground he cast ;
And then oppressing him with vrgent paine, 200
Ere long enforst to breath his vtmost blast,
Gnashing his cruell teeth at him in vaine,
And threatning his sharpe clawes, now wanting powre
to straine.

Then tooke he vp betwixt his armes twaine
The litle babe, sweet relickes of his pray ;
Whom pitying to heare so fore complaine,
From his soft eyes the teares he wypt away,
And from his face the filth that did it ray :
And euery litle limbe he searcht around,
And euery part, that vnder sweathbands lay, 210
Least that the beafts sharpe teeth had any wound
Made in his tender flesh ; but whole them all he found.

So hauing all his bands againe vptyde,
He with him thought backe to returne againe :

But when he lookt about on euery fyde,
To weet which way were best to entertaine, /
To bring him to the place, where he would faine
He could no path nor tract of foot descry,
Ne by inquirie learne, nor ghesse by ayne.
For nought but woods and forrests farre and nyr
That all about did close the compasse of his eye.

Much was he then encombred, ne could tell
Which way to take : now West he went a while
Then North ; then neither, but as fortune sell.
So vp and downe he wandred many a mile,
With wearie trauell and vncertaine toile,
Yet nought the nearer to his iourneys end ;
And euermore his louely litle spoile
Crying for food, did greatly him offend.
So all that day in wandring vainely he did spend.

At last about the setting of the Sunne,
Him selfe out of the forest he did wynd,
And by good fortune the plaine champion wonn
Where looking all about, where he mote fynd
Some place of succour to content his mynd,
At length he heard vnder the forrests fyde
A voice, that seemed of some woman kynd,
Which to her selfe lamenting loudly cryde,
And oft complayn'd of fate, and Fortune oft defyc

To whom approching, when as she perceiued
A stranger wight in place, her plaint she stayd,

As if she doubted to haue bene deceiued,
Or loth to let her sorrowes be bewrayd.
Whom when as *Calepine* saw so dismayd,
He to her drew, and with faire blandishment
Her chearing vp, thus gently to her sayd ;
What be you wofull Dame, which thus lament,
And for what cause declare, so mote ye not repent ?

To / whom she thus ; what need me Sir to tell,
That which your selfe haue erst ared so right ? 250
A wofull dame ye haue me termed well ;
So much more wofull, as my wofull plight
Cannot redressed be by liuing wight.
Nathlesse (quoth he) if need doe not you bynd,
Doe it disclose, to ease your grieued spright :
Oftimes it haps, that sorrowes of the mynd
Find remedie vnfought, which seeking cannot fynd.

Then thus began the lamentable Dame ;
Sith then ye needs will know the grieve I hoord,
I am th'vnfortunate *Matilde* by name, 260
The wife of bold Sir *Bruin*, who is Lord
Of all this land, late conquer'd by his sword
From a great Gyant, called *Cormoraunt* ;
Whom he did ouerthrow by yonder foord,
And in three battailes did so deadly daunt,
That he dare not returne for all his daily vaunt.

So is my Lord now seiz'd of all the land,
As in his fee, with peaceable estate,
And quietly doth hold it in his hand,
Ne any dares with him for it debate. 270

l. 248, ? added, not after l. 247 as in 1609 : l. 249, ; for, —accepted.

But to these happie fortunes, cruell Fate
 Hath ioyn'd one euill, which doth ouerthrow
 All these our ioyes, and all our blisse abate ;
 And like in time to further ill to grow,
 And all this land with endlesse losse to ouerflow.

For th'heauens enuying our prosperitie,
 Haue not vouchsaf't to graunt vnto vs twaine
 The gladfull blessing of posteritie,
 Which we might see after our selues remaine /
 In th'heritage of our vnhappy paine : 280
 So that for want of heires it to defend,
 All is in time like to returne againe
 To that foule seed, who dayly doth attend
 To leape into the same after our liues end.

But most my Lord is griued herewithall,
 And makes exceeding mone, when he does thinke
 That all this land vnto his foe shall fall,
 For which he long in vaine did sweat and swinke,
 That now the same he greatly doth forthinke.
 Yet was it sayd, there should to him a sonne 290
Be gotten, not begotten, which should drinke
 And dry vp all the water, which doth runne
 In the next brooke, by whō that seed should be fordonne.

Well hop't he then, when this was propheside,
 That from his sides some noble chyld should rize,
 The which through fame should farre be magnifide,
 And this proud gyant should with braue emprize

l. 271, capital F accepted : l. 272, 'ouerthrow' in '96 : l. 280, 'of our vnhappy paine,' and so 1609, 1611, etc. Church suggested 'of this our happie paine.'

Quite ouerthrow, who now ginnes to despize
 The good Sir *Bruin*, growing farre in yeares ;
 Who thinks from me his sorrow all doth rize. 300
 Lo this my cause of griefe to you appeares ;
 For which I thus doe mourne, and poure forth ceafelesse
 teares.

Which when he heard, he inly touched was
 With tender ruth for her vnworthy griefe :
 And when he had deuized of her cafe,
 He gan in mind conceiue a fit reliefe
 For all her paine, if please her make the priefe.
 And hauing cheared her, thus said ; faire Dame,
 In euils, counsell is the comfort chiefe ;
 Which though I be not wise enough to frame, 310
 Yet as I well it meane, vouchsafe it without blame.

If / that the cause of this your languishment
 Be lacke of children ; to supply your place,
 Lo how good fortune doth to you present
 This litle babe, o sweete and louely face,
 And spotlesse spirit, in which ye may enchace
 What euer formes ye list thereto apply,
 Being now soft and fit them to embrace ;
 Whether ye list him traine in cheualry,
 Or nourle vp in lore of learn'd Philosophy. 320

And certes it hath oftentimes bene seene,
 That of the like, whose linage was vnknowne,

l. 304, : for,—accepted : l. 309, , after 'euils' and ; (for : of 1609)
 after 'chiefe' and , of '96 : l. 313, ; after 'children' for,—put after 'place'
 in 1609 : l. 314, 'Lo' for 'Low' of '96—accepted.

More braue and noble knights haue rayfed beene,
 As their victorious deedes haue often shoven,
 Being with fame through many Nations blowen,
 Then those, which haue bene dandled in the lap.
 Therefore some thought, that those braue imps were
 Here by the Gods, and fed with heauenly fap, (fowen
 That made them grow so high t'all honorable hap.

The Ladie, hearkning to his sensesfull speech, 330
 Found nothing that he said, vnmeet nor geason,
 Hauing oft seene it tryde, as he did teach.
 Therefore inclyning to his goodly reason,
 Agreeing well both with the place and season,
 She gladly did of that same babe accept,
 As of her owne by liuerey and seifin ;
 And hauing ouer it a litle wept,
 She bore it thence, and euer as her owne it kept.

Right glad was *Calepine* to be so rid
 Of his young charge, whereof he skilled nought : 340
 Ne she lesse glad ; for she so wisely did,
 And with her husband vnder hand so wrought, /
 That when that infant vnto him she brought,
 She made him thinke it surely was his owne,
 And it in goodly thewes so well vpbrought,
 That it became a famous knight well knowne, (showne
 And did right noble deedes, the which elsewhere are

But *Calepine*, now being left alone
 Vnder the greenewoods side in forie plight,

ll. 324-5 within () : l. 330, , after 'Ladie'—accepted ; and l. 336,
 for , : l. 346, , added after 'knowne.'

Withouten armes or steede to ride vpon, 350
Or houle to hide his head from heauens spight,
Albe that Dame by all the meanes she might,
Him oft desired home with her to wend,
And offred him, his courtesie to requite,
Both horse and armes, and what so else to lend ;
Yet he them all refusd, though thankd her as a frend.

And for exceeding grieve which inly grew,
That he his loue so lucklesse now had lost,
On the cold ground, maugre himselfe he threw,
For fell despight, to be so sorely crost ; 360
And there all night himselfe in anguish tost,
Vowing, that neuer he in bed againe
His limbes would rest, ne lig in ease embost,
Till that his Ladies fight he mote attaine,
Or vnderstand, that she in safetie did remaine.

l. 352, (*hy . . . might*), and l. 354, (*his . . . requite*) : l. 355 ; for ,—
accepted.

Cant. / V.



O What an easie thing is to defcry
The gentle blood, how euer it be wrapt
In sad misfortunes foule deformity,
And wretched forrowes, which haue often hapt ?
For howfoeuer it may grow mis-shapt, 10
Like this wyld man, being vndisplynd,
That to all vertue it may seeme vnapt,
Yet will it shew some sparkes of gentle mynd,
And at the last breake forth in his owne proper kynd.

That plainly may in this wyld man be red,
Who though he were still in this desert wood,
Mongst saluage beasts, both rudely borne and bred,
Ne euer saw faire guise, ne learned good,
Yet shewd some token of his gentle blood,
By gentle vſage of that wretched Dame. 20
For certes he was borne of noble blood,

1. 2, 'Serena' (Hughes) : l. 3, ; for, —accepted : l. 11 within ().

How euer by hard hap he hether came ;
As ye may know, when time shall be to tell the fame.

Who when as now long time he lacked had
The good Sir *Calepine*, that farre was strayed,
Did wexe exceeding sorrowfull and fad,
As he of some misfortune were afraid :/
And leauing there this Ladie all dismayd,
Went forth streightway into the forrest wyde,
To seeke, if he perchance a sleepe were layd, 30
Or what so else were vnto him betyde :
He fought him farre & neare, yet him no where he spyde.

Tho backe returning to that forie Dame,
He shewed semblant of exceeding mone,
By speaking signes, as he them best could frame ;
Now wringing both his wretched hands in one,
Now beating his hard head vpon a stone,
That ruth it was to see him so lament.
By which she well perceiuing, what was done,
Gan teare her hayre, and all her garments rent, 40
And beat her breast, and piteously her selfe torment.

Vpon the ground her selfe she fiercely threw,
Regardlesse of her wounds, yet bleeding rife,
That with their bloud did all the flore imbrew,
As if her breast new launcht with murderous knife,
Would streight dislodge the wretched wearie life,
There she long groueling, and deepe groning lay,
As if her vitall powers were at strife

l. 22, 'hither': l. 30, 'asleepe': l. 45, 'launc't': l. 49, : for ,—accepted.

With stronger death, and feared their decay :
Such were the Ladies pangs and dolorous away. 50

Whom when the Salvage saw so sore distressed,
He reared her up from the bloody ground,
And fought by all the means, that he could best,
Her to recure out of that stony ffound,
And staunch the bleeding of her dreary wound.
Yet would she be recomforted for nought,
Ne cease her sorrow and impatient ffound,
But day and night did vex her carefull thought,
And euer more and more her owne affliction wrought.

At length, when as no hope of his retourne 60
She saw now left, she cast to leane the place,
And wend abroad, though feeble and forlorne,
To seeke some comfort in that sorie case.
His steede now strong through rest so long a space,
Well as she could, she got, and did bedight,
And being thereon mounted, forth did pace,
Withouten guide, her to conduct aright,
Or gard her to defend from bold oppressors might.

Whom when her Host saw readie to depart,
He would not suffer her alone to fare, 70
But gan himselfe addresse to take her part.
Those warlike armes, which *Calpine* whyleare
Had left behind, he gan estfoones prepare,
And put them all about himselfe vnfit,
His shield, his helmet, and his curats bare ;

But without sword vpon his thigh to fit :
Sir *Calepine* himfelfe away had hidden it.

So forth they traueled an vneuen payre,
That mote to all men seeme an vncouth fight ;
A saluage man matcht with a Ladie fayre, 80
That rather seem'd the conquest of his might,
Gotten by spoyle, then purchaced aright.
But he did her attend most carefully,
And faithfully did serue both day and night,
Withouten thought of shame or villeny,
Ne euer shewed signe of foule disloyalty.

Vpon a day as on their way they went,
It chaunst some furniture about her steed
To be disordred by some accident :
Which to redresse, she did th'affistance need / 90
Of this her groome : which he by signes did reede ;
And streight his combrous armes aside did lay
Vpon the ground, withouten doubt or dreed,
And in his homely wize began to assay
T'amend what was amisse, and put in right aray.

Bout which whilest he was busied thus hard,
Lo where a knight together with his squire,
All arm'd to point, came ryding thetherward,
Which seemed by their portance and attire,
To be two errant knights, that did inquire 100
After aduentures, where they mote them get.
Those were to weet (if that ye it require)

L. 91, : and ; for,—accepted : and l. 98, , after '*point*,' also '*thither*.'

Prince *Arthur* and young *Timias*, which met
By straunge occasion, that here needs forth be set.

After that *Timias* had againe recured
The fauour of *Belphebe*, (as ye heard)
And of her grace did stand againe assured,
To happie blisse he was full high vprear'd,
Nether of enuy, nor of chaunge afeard,
Though many foes did him maligne therefore, 110
And with vniust detraction him did beard ;
Yet he himselfe so well and wisely bore,
That in her soueraine lyking he dwelt euermore.

But of them all, which did his ruine seeke
Three mightie enemies did him most despight,
Three mightie ones, and cruell minded eeke,
That him not onely fought by open might
To ouerthrow, but to supplant by slight.
The first of them by name was cald *Despetto*,
Exceeding all the rest in powre and hight ; 120
The second not so strong but wise, *Decetto* ;
The third nor strong nor wise, but spightfullest *Defetto*.

Oftimes / their sundry powres they did employ,
And feuerall deceipts, but all in vaine :
For neither they by force could him destroy,
Ne yet entrap in treasons subtile traine.
Therefore conspiring all together plaine,
They did their counsels now in one compound ;
Where singled forces faile, conioynd may gaine.
The *Blatant Beast* the fittest meanes they found, 130
To worke his vtter shame, and throughly him confound.

Vpon a day as they the time did waite,
When he did raunge the wood for saluage game,
They fent that *Blatant Beast* to be a baite,
To draw him from his deare beloued dame,
Vnwares into the daunger of defame.
For well they wist, that Squire to be so bold,
That no one beast in forrest wyld or tame,
Met him in chafe, but he it challenge would,
And plucke the pray oftymes out of their greedy
hould.

The hardy boy, as they deuifed had, 141
Seeing the vgly Monster passing by,
Vpon him fet, of perill nought adrad,
Ne skilfull of the vncouth ieopardy ;
And charged him so fierce and furiously,
That his great force vnabie to endure,
He forced was to turne from him and fly :
Yet ere he fled, he with his tooth impure
Him heedlesse bit, the whiles he was thereof secure.

Securely he did after him pursfew,
Thinking by speed to ouertake his flight ; 150
Who through thicke woods and brakes & briers him
To weary him the more, and waste his spight, / (drew,
So that he now has almost spent his spright.
Till that at length vnto a woody glade
He came, whose couert stopt his further fight,
There his three foes shrowded in guilefull shade,
Out of their ambush broke, and gan him to inuade.

1. 140, 'holde' : 1. 146, (his . . . endure).

Sharpely they all attonce did him affaile,
 Burning with inward rancour and despight, 160
 And heaped strokes did round about him haile
 With so huge force, that seemed nothing might
 Beare off their blowes, from percing thorough quite.
 Yet he them all so warily did ward,
 That none of them in his soft flesh did bite,
 And all the while his hacke for best safegard,
 He lent against a tree, that backward onfet bard.

Like a wylde Bull, that being at a bay,
 Is bayted of a mastiffe, and a hound,
 And a curre-dog ; that doe him sharpe assay 170
 On euery side, and beat about him round ;
 But most that curre, barking with bitter sownd,
 And creeping still behinde, doth him incomber,
 That in his chauffe he digs the trampled ground,
 And threats his horns, and bellowes like the thonder;
 So did that Squire his foes disperse, and driue afonder.

Him well behoued so ; for his three foes
 Sought to encompasse him on euery side,
 And dangerously did round about enclose.
 But most of all *Defetto* him annoyde, 180
 Creeping behinde him still to haue destroyde :
 So did *Decetto* eke him circumuent,
 But stout *Despetto* in his greater pryde,
 Did front him face to face against him bent ;
 Yet he them all withstood, and often made relent.

l. 172, , after 'curre'—accepted, and l. 175, ; for , : l. 184, ; for ,—accepted.

Till / that at length nigh tyrd with former chace,
And weary now with carefull keeping ward,
He gan to shrinke, and somewhat to giue place,
Full like ere long to haue escaped hard ;
When as vnwares he in the forrest heard 190
A trampling steede, that with his neighing fast
Did warne his rider be vppon his gard ;
With noise whereof the Squire now nigh aghast,
Reuiued was, and sad dispaire away did cast.

Eftsoones he spide a Knight approching nye,
Who seeing one in so great daunger set
Mongst many foes, him selfe did faster hye ;
To reskue him, and his weake part abet,
For pittie so to see him ouerfet.
Whom soone as his three enemies did vew, 200
They fled, and fast into the wood did get :
Him booted not to thinke them to pursue,
The couert was so thicke, that did no passage shew.

Then turning to that swaine, him well he knew
To be his *Timias*, his owne true Squire :
Whereof exceeding glad, he to him drew,
And him embracing twixt his armes entire,
Him thus bespake ; My liefse, my lifes desire,
Why haue ye me alone thus long yleft ?
Tell me what worlds despight, or heauens yre 210
Hath you thus long away from me bereft ?
Where haue ye all this while bin wandring, where bene
west ?

With that, he fighed deepe for inward tyme :
 To whom the Squire nought aunswered againe,
 But shedding few soft teares from tender eyne,
 His deare affect with silence did restraine, /
 And shut vp all his plaint in priuy paine.
 There they awhile some gracious speaches spent,
 As to them seemed fit, time to entertaine.
 After all which vp to their steedes they went, 220
 And forth together rode a comely couplement.

So now they be arriued both in fight
 Of this wyld man, whom they full bufie found
 About the sad *Serena* things to dight,
 With those braue armours lying on the ground,
 That seem'd the spoile of some right well renownd.
 Which when that Squire beheld, he to them stept,
 Thinking to take them from that hylding hound :
 But he it seeing, lightly to him lept,
 And sternely with strong hand it from his handling kept.

Gnashing his grinded teeth with griesly looke, 231
 And sparkling fire out of his furious eyne,
 Him with his fist vnwares on th'head he strooke,
 That made him downe vnto the earth encline ;
 Whence soone vpstarting much he gan repine,
 And laying hand vpon his wrathfull blade,
 Thought therewithall forthwith him to haue flaine,
 Who it perceiuing, hand vpon him layd,
 And greedily him griping, his auengement stayd.

With that aloude the faire *Serena* cryde 240
 Vnto the Knight, them to dispart in twaine :

l. 213, , after 'that' : l. 219, , after 'fit' : l. 228, 'hilding.'

Who to them stepping did them soone diuide,
 And did from further violence restraine,
 Albe the wyld-man hardly would refraine.
 Then gan the Prince, of her for to demand,
 What and from whence she was, and by what traine
 She fell into that saluage villaines hand,
 And whether free with him she now were, or in band.

To / whom she thus ; I am, as now ye see,
 The wretchedst Dame, that liue this day on ground ;
 Who both in minde, the which most griueth me, 251
 And body haue receiu'd a mortall wound,
 That hath me driuen to this drery stound.
 I was erewhile, the loue of *Calepine* :
 Who whether he aliue be to be found,
 Or by some deadly chaunce be done to pine,
 Since I him lately lost, vneath is to define.

In saluage forrest I him lost of late,
 Where I had surely long ere this bene dead ;
 Or else remained in most wretched state, 260
 Had not this wyld man in that wofull stead
 Kept, and deliuered me from deadly dread.
 In such a saluage wight, of brutish kynd,
 Amongst wilde beastes in desert forrests bred,
 It is most straunge and wonderfull to fynd
 So milde humanity, and perfect gentle mynd.

Let me therefore this fauour for him finde,
 That ye will not your wrath vpon him wreake,

l. 250, ; for ,—accepted ; and l. 254, : for ,: *ibid.*, Dr. Morris mistakenly gives '*lives*,' and queries '*live*,' which is 1596 text. Professor Child prints '*lived*,' grammatically and every way bad.

Sith he cannot expresse his simple minde,
 Ne yours conceiue, ne but by tokens speake : 270
 Small praise to proue your powre on wight so weak.
 With such faire words she did their heate asswage,
 And the strong course of their displeasure breake,
 That they to pittie turnd their former rage,
 And each fought to supply the office of her page.

So hauing all things well about her dight,
 She on her way cast forward to proceede,
 And they her forth conducted, where they might
 Finde harbour fit to comfort her great neede. /
 For now her wounds corruption gan to breed ; 280
 And eke this Squire, who likewise wounded was
 Of that same Monster late, for lacke of heed,
 Now gan to faint, and further could not pas
 Through feebleness, which all his limbes oppressed has.

So forth they rode together all in troupe,
 To seeke some place, the which mote yeeld some ease
 To these sicke twaine, that now began to droupe :
 And all the way the Prince sought to appease
 The bitter anguish of their sharpe disease,
 By all the courteous meanes he could inuent ; 290
 Somewhile with merry purpose fit to please,
 And otherwhile with good encouragement,
 To make them to endure the pains did them torment.

Mongst which, *Serena* did to him relate
 The foule discourtfies and vnknightly parts,

l. 287, : for,—accepted ; and l. 290, ; for , : l. 293, , after '*pains*' in '96 removed, as in 1609.

Which *Turpine* had vnto her shewed late,
Without compassion of her cruell smarts :
Although *Blandina* did with all her arts
Him otherwise perswade, all that she might ;
Yet he of malice, without her defarts, 300
Not onely her excluded late at night,
But also trayterously did wound her weary Knight.

Wherewith the Prince fore moued, there auoud,
That soone as he returned backe againe,
He would auenge th'abuses of that proud
And shamefull Knight, of whom she did complaine.
This wize did they each other entertaine,
To passe the tedious trauell of the way ;
Till towards night they came vnto a plaine,
By which a little Hermitage there lay, 310
Far from all neighbourhood, the which annoy it may.

And / nigh thereto a little Chappell stoode,
Which being all with Yuy ouerspred,
Deckt all the roofe, and shadowing the roode,
Seem'd like a groue faire braunched ouer hed :
Therein the Hermite, which his life here led
In streight obseruaunce of religious vow,
Was wont his howres and holy things to bed ;
And therein he likewise was praying now,
Whenas these Knights arriu'd, they wist not where nor
how. 320

They stayd not there, but streight way in did pas.
Whom when the Hermite present saw in place,

From his seuerest freight he troubled was ;
 Whom branding of he toward them did pace,
 With his robes and grane befeeming grace :
 For well he deem'd that violence he had bene
 Some goodly person and of gentle race,
 That would his good to all and well did weene,
 How eke to entertaine with civill well befeene,

And loocky it was sayd by common fame, 330
 So long as age enabled him thereto,
 That he had bene a man of mickle name,
 Renowned much in armes and derring doe :
 But being aged now and weary to
 Of warres delight and worlds contentious toyle,
 The name of knight-hood he did disauow,
 And hanging vp his armes and warlike spoyle,
 From all this worlds incombrouce did himfelfe affoyle.

He thence them led into his Hermitage,
 Letting their feedes to graze vpon the greene : 340
 Small was his house, and like a little cage,
 For his owne turne, yet inly neate and clene, /
 Deckt with greene boughes, and flowers gay befeene.
 Therein he them full faire did entertaine
 Not with such forged shewes, as fitter beene
 For courting fooles, that curtesies would faine,
 But with entire affection and appearaunce plaine.

Yet was their fare but homely, such as hee
 Did vse, his feeble body to sustaine ;
 The which full gladly they did take in glee, 350
 Such as it was, ne did of want complaine,

But being well suffiz'd, them rested faine.
 But faire *Serene* all night could take no rest,
 Ne yet that gentle Squire, for grievous paine
 Of their late woundes, the which the *Blatant Beast*
 Had giuen them, whose grieffe through suffraunce fore
 increast.

So all that night they past in great diseafe,
 Till that the morning, bringing earely light
 To guide mens labours, brought them also ease,
 And some affwagement of their painefull plight. 360
 Then vp they rose, and gan them felues to dight
 Vnto their iourney; but that Squire and Dame
 So faint and feeble were, that they ne might
 Endure to trauell, nor one foote to frame:
 Their hearts were sicke, their sides were sore, their feete
 were lame.

Therefore the Prince, whom great affaires in mynd
 Would not permit, to make their lenger stay,
 Was forced there to leaue them both behynd,
 In that good Hermits charge, whom he did pray
 To tend them well. So forth he went his way, 370
 And with him eke the saluage, that whyleare
 Seeing his royall vface and array,
 Was greatly growne in loue of that braue pere,
 Would needes depart, as shall declared be elsewhere.

l. 354, , after '*Squire*'—accepted: l. 367, '*there*': ll. 371-3 within
 ().

Cant. VI.

*The Hermit hastes both Squire and dame
Of their love maladies ;
His Targine with defiance, and flame
For his late villainies.*

N O wound, which warlike hand of enemy
 Inflicts with dint of sword, so sore doth light,
 As doth the poyſnous ſting, which Infamy
 Infixeth in the name of noble wight :
 For by no art, nor any leaches might
 It euer can recured be againe ;
 Ne all the ſkill, which that immortall ſpright
 Of *Podalyrius* did in it retaine,
 Can remedy ſuch hurts ; ſuch hurts are helliſh paine.

Such were the wounds, the which that *Blatant Beast*
 Made in the bodies of that Squire and Dame ;
 And being such, were now much more increast,
 For want of taking heede vnto the fame,
 That now corrupt and curelesse they became.
 Howbe that carefull Hermite did his best,
 With many kindes of medicines meete, to tame

The poyfnous humour, which did most infest
Their ranckling wounds, & euery day them duely drest.

For he right well in Leaches craft was seene,
And through the long experience of his dayes,
Which had in many fortunes tossed beene,
And past through many perillous assayes, /
He knew the diuerse went of mortall wayes,
And in the mindes of men had great infight ;
Which with sage counsell, when they went astray, 30
He could enforme, and them reduce aright,
And al the passiōs heale, which wōd the weaker spright.

For whylome he had bene a doughty Knight,
As any one, that liued in his daies,
And proued oft in many perillous fight ;
Of which he grace and glory wonne alwaies,
And in all battels bore away the baies.
But being now attacht with timely age,
And weary of this worlds vnquiet waies,
He tooke him selfe vnto this Hermitage, 40
In which he liu'd alone, like carelesse bird in cage.

One day, as he was searching of their wounds,
He found that they had festred priuily,
And ranckling inward with vnruely stounds,
The inner parts now gan to putrify,
That quite they seem'd past helpe of surgery,
And rather needed to be discipline
With holefome reede of sad sobriety,

l. 35, ; for,—accepted : l. 36, 'In' (1611).

To rule the stubborne rage of passion blinde :
Giue salues to euey fore, but counsell to the minde. 50

So taking them apart into his cell,
He to that point fit speeches gan to frame,
As he the art of words knew wondrous well,
And eke could doe, as well as say the same,
And thus he to them sayd ; faire daughter Dame,
And you faire sonne, which here thus long now lie
In piteous languor, since ye hither came,
In vaine of me ye hope for remedie,
And I likewise in vaine doe salues to you applie.

For / in your selfe your onely helpe doth lie, 60
To heale your selues, and must proceed alone
From your owne will, to cure your maladie.
Who can him cure, that will be cur'd of none ?
If therefore health ye seeke, obserue this one.
First learne your outward fences to refraine
From things, that stirre vp fraile affection ;
Your eies, your cares, your tongue, your talk restraine
From that they most affect, and in due termes containe.

For from those outward fences ill affected,
The seede of all this euill first doth spring, 70
Which at the first before it had infected,
Mote easie be suppressd with little thing :
But being growen strong, it forth doth bring
Sorrow, and anguish, and impatient paine
In th'inneer parts, and lastly scattering
Contagious poyson clofe through euey vaine,
It neuer rests, till it haue wrought his finall bane.

For that beastes teeth, which wounded you tofore,
 Are so exceeding venomous and keene,
 Made all of rusty yron, ranckling fore, 80
 That where they bite, it booteth not to weene
 With salue, or antidote, or other mene
 It euer to amend : ne maruaile ought ;
 For that same beast was bred of hellish strene,
 And long in darksome *Stygian* den vpbrought,
 Begot of foule *Echidna*, as in bookes is taught.

Echidna is a Monster direfull dred,
 Whom Gods doe hate, and heauens abhor to see ;
 So hideous is her shape, so huge her hed,
 That euen the hellish fiends affrighted bee / 90
 At fight thereof, and from her presence flee :
 Yet did her face and former parts professe
 A faire young Mayden, full of comely glee ;
 But all her hinder parts did plaine expresse
 A monstrous Dragon, full of fearefull vglinesse.

To her the Gods, for her so dreadfull face,
 In fearefull darkenesse, furthest from the skie,
 And from the earth, appointed haue her place,
 Mongst rocks and caues, where she enrolld doth lie
 In hideous horroure and obscurity, 100
 Wasting the strength of her immortall age.
 There did *Typhaon* with her company ;
 Cruell *Typhaon*, whose tempestuous rage
 Make th'heauens tremble oft, & him with vowes affwage.

Of that commixtion they did then beget
 This hellish Dog, that hight the *Blatant Beast* ;

A wicked Monster, that his tongue doth whet
 Gainst all, both good and bad, both most and least,
 And poures his poyfnous gall forth to infest
 The noblest wights with notable defame : 110
 Ne euer Knight, that bore so lofty creast,
 Ne euer Lady of so honest name,
 But he them spotted with reproch, or secrete shame.

In vaine therefore it were, with medicine
 To goe about to salue such kynd of fore,
 That rather needes wise read and discipline,
 Then outward salues, that may augment it more.
 Aye me (sayd then *Serena* fighting fore)
 What hope of helpe doth then for vs remaine,
 If that no salues may vs to health restore ? 120
 But sith we need good counsell (sayd the swaine)
 Aread good fire, some counsell, that may vs sustaine.

The / best (sayd he) that I can you aduize,
 Is to auoide the occasion of the ill :
 For when the cause, whence euill doth arize,
 Remoued is, th'effect surceaseth still.
 Abstaine from pleasure, and restraine your will,
 Subdue desire, and bridle loose delight,
 Vse scanted diet, and forbear your fill,
 Shun secrecie, and talke in open sight : 130
 So shall you soone repaire your present euill plight.

Thus hauing sayd, his sickely patients
 Did gladly hearken to his graue beheaft,
 And kept so well his wise commaundements,
 That in short space their malady was ceaft,

And eke the biting of that harmefull Beast
Was throughly heal'd. Tho when they did perceau
There wounds recur'd, and forces reincreast,
Of that good Hermite both they tooke their leaue,
And went both on their way, ne ech would other leaue.

But each th'other vow'd t'accompany : 140
The Lady, for that she was much in dred,
Now left alone in great extremity,
The Squire, for that he courteous was indeed,
Would not her leaue alone in her great need.
So both together traueled, till they met
With a faire Mayden clad in mourning weed,
Vpon a mangy iade vnmetely set,
And a lewd foole her leading thorough dry and wet.

But by what meanes that shame to her befell, 150
And how thereof her felfe she did acquite,
I must a while forbear to you to tell ;
Till that, as comes by course, I doe recite, /
What fortune to the Briton Prince did lite,
Pursuing that proud Knight, the which whileare
Wrought to Sir *Calidore* so foule despight ;
And eke his Lady, though she sickely were,
So lewdly had abusde, as ye did lately heare.

The Prince according to the former token,
Which faire *Serene* to him deliuered had, 160
Pursu'd him streight, in mynd to bene ywroken
Of all the vile demeane, and vsage bad,

l. 140, : for.—accepted, and l. 141, : for , : l. 156, '*Calidore*'—*sic*, and in 1609 ; but in my exemplar in a contemporary hand the correction is made '*Calityne*,' and so Hughes.

With which he had those two so ill bestad :
 Ne wight with him on that aduenture went,
 But that wylde man, whom though he oft forbad,
 Yet for no bidding, nor for being shent,
 Would he restrayned be from his attendement.

Arriuing there, as did by chaunce befall,
 He found the gate wyde ope, and in he rode,
 Ne stayd, till that he came into the hall : 170
 Where soft dismounting like a weary lode,
 Vpon the ground with feeble feete he trode,
 As he vnable were for very neede
 To moue one foote, but there must make abode ;
 The whiles the saluage man did take his steede,
 And in some stable neare did set him vp to feede.

Ere long to him a homely groome there came,
 That in rude wife him asked, what he was,
 That durst so boldly, without let or shame,
 Into his Lords forbidden hall to passe. 180
 To whom the Prince, him sayning to embase,
 Mylde answer made ; he was an errant Knight,
 The which was fall'n into this feeble case,
 Through many wounds, which lately he in fight,
 Recciued had, and prayd to pittie his ill plight.

But / he, the more outrageous and bold,
 Sternely did bid him quickly thence auunt,
 Or deare aby ; for why his Lord of old
 Did hate all errant Knights, which there did haunt,

l. 181, (*him . . . embaze*) : l. 188, ; for ,—accepted ; and l. 190, : for , .

Ne lodging would to any of them graunt : 190
And therefore lightly bad him packe away,
Not sparing him with bitter words to taunt ;
And therewithall rude hand on him did lay.
To thrust him out of dore, doing his worst assay.

Which when the Saluage coming now in place,
Beheld, eftsoones he all enraged grew,
And running streight vpon that villaine base,
Like a fell Lion at him fiercely flew,
And with his teeth and nailes, in present vew,
Him rudely rent, and all to peeces tore : 200
So miserably him all helpelesse slew,
That with the noise, whilest he did loudly rore,
The people of the house rose forth in great vpror.

Who when on ground they saw their fellow slaine,
And that same Knight and Saluage standing by,
Vpon them two they fell with might and maine,
And on them layd so huge and horribly,
As if they would haue slaine them presently.
But the bold Prince defended him so well,
And their assault withstood so mightily, 210
That maugre all their might, he did repell,
And beat them back, whilest many vnderneath him fell.

Yet he them still so sharpely did pursew,
That few of them he left aliue, which fled,
Those euill tidings to their Lord to shew.
Who hearing how his people badly sped,
Came / forth in hast : where when as with the dead
He saw the ground all strow'd, and that same Knight
And saluage with their blood fresh steeming red,

He woxe nigh mad with wrath and fell despight, 220
And with reprochfull words him thus bespake on hight ;

Art thou he, traytor, that with treason vile,
Hast slaine my men in this vnmanly maner,
And now triumphest in the piteous spoile
Of these poore folk, whose soules with black dishonor
And foule defame doe decke thy bloudy baner ?
The meede whereof shall shortly be thy shame,
And wretched end, which still attendeth on her.
With that him felse to battell he did frame ;
So did his forty yeomen, which there with him came.

With dreadfull force they all did him assaile, 231
And round about with boystrous strokes oppresse,
That on his shield did rattle like to haile
In a great tempest ; that in such distresse,
He wist not to which side him to addresse.
And euermore that crauen cowherd Knight,
Was at his backe with heartlesse heedinesse,
Wayting if he vnwares him murther might :
For cowardize doth still in villany delight.

Whereof whenas the Prince was well aware, 240
He to him turnd with furious intent,
And him against his powre gan to prepare ;
Like a fierce Bull, that being bufie bent
To fight with many foes about him ment,
Feeling some curre behinde his heeles to bite,
Turnes him about with fell auengement ;

So likewife turnde the Prince vpon the Knight,
And layd at him amaine with all his will and might.

Who / when he once his dreadfull strokes had tasted,
Durst not the fury of his force abyde, 250
But turn'd abacke, and to retyre him hasted
Through the thick prease, there thinking him to hyde.
But when the Prince had once him plainely eyde,
He foot by foot him followed alway,
Ne would him suffer once to shrink asyde,
But ioyning close, huge lode at him did lay :
Who flying still did ward, and warding fly away.

But when his foe he still so eger saw,
Vnto his heeles himselfe he did betake,
Hoping vnto some refuge to withdraw : 260
Ne would the Prince him euer foot forsake,
Where so he went, but after him did make.
He fled from roome to roome, from place to place,
Whylest euery ioynt for dread of death did quake,
Still looking after him, that did him chace ;
That made him euermore increafe his speedie pace.

At last he vp into the chamber came,
Whereas his loue was sitting all alone,
Wayting what tydings of her folke became.
There did the Prince him ouertake anone, 270
Crying in vaine to her, him to bemone ;
And with his sword him on the head did smyte,
That to the ground he fell in senselesse swone :
Yet whether thwart or flatly it did lyte,
The tempred steele did not into his braynepan byte.

1. 255, , after '*aside*' for ; of 1609 and *nil* of '96.

Which when the Ladie saw, with great affright
 She starting vp, began to shrieke aloud,
 And with her garment couering him from fight,
 Seem'd vnder her protection him to shroud ;/
 And falling lowly at his feet, her bowd 280
 Vpon her knee, intreating him for grace,
 And often him besought, and prayd, and vowd ;
 That with the ruth of her so wretched case,
 He stayd his second strooke, and did his hand abase.

Her weed she then withdrawing, did him discouer,
 Who now come to himselfe, yet would not rize,
 But still did lie as dead, and quake, and quiuer,
 That euen the Prince his basenesse did despize ;
 And eke his Dame him seeing in such guize,
 Gan him recomfort, and from ground to reare. 290
 Who rising vp at last in ghastly wize,
 Like troubled ghost did dreadfully appeare,
 As one that had no life him left through former feare.

Whom when the Prince so deadly saw dismayd,
 He for such basenesse shamefully him shent,
 And with sharpe words did bitterly vpbrayd ;
 Vile cowheard dogge, now doe I much repent,
 That euer I this life vnto thee lent,
 Whereof thou caytiue so vnworthie art ;
 That both thy Loue, for lacke of hardiment, 300
 And eke thy felfe, for want of manly hart, (part
 And eke all knights hast shamed with this knightlesse

l. 288, ; for ,—accepted : l. 297, '*coward*,' as before, and so l. 304 :
 l. 299, '*captive*' : l. 300, capital L—accepted.

Yet further hast thou heaped shame to shame,
And crime to crime, by this thy cowheard feare.
For first it was to thee reprochfull blame,
To erect this wicked custome, which I heare,
Gainst errant Knights and Ladies thou dost reare,
Whom when thou mayst, thou dost of arms despoile,
Or of their vpper garment, which they weare :
Yet doest thou not with manhood, but with guile 310
Maintaine this euill vse, thy foes thereby to foile.

And / lastly in approuance of thy wrong,
To shew such faintnesse and foule cowardize,
Is greatest shame : for oft it falles, that strong
And valiant knights doe rashly enterprize,
Either for fame, or else for exercise,
A wrongfull quarrell to maintaine by fight ;
Yet haue, through prowesse and their braue emprise,
Gotten great worship in this worldes fight.
For greater force there needs to maintaine wrong, then
right. 320

Yet since thy life vnto this Ladie fayre
I giuen haue, liue in reproch and scorne ;
Ne euer armes, ne euer knighthood dare
Hence to professe : for shame is to adorne
With so braue badges one so basely borne ;
But onely breath sith that I did forgiue.
So hauing from his crauen bodie torne
Those goodly armes, he them away did giue
And onely suffred him this wretched life to liue.

l. 317, '*fight*'—accepted for '*right*' of '96.

There whilest he thus was setting things aboue, 330
 Atwene that Ladie myld and recreant knight,
 To whom his life he graunted for her loue,
 He gan bethinke him, in what perilous plight
 He had behynd him left that saluage wight,
 Amongst so many foes, whom sure he thought
 By this quite flaine in so vnequall fight :
 Therefore descending backe in haste, he fought
 If yet he were aliue, or to destruction brought.

There he him found enuironed about
 With slaughtred bodies, which his hand had flaine, 340
 And laying yet a fresh with courage stout
 Vpon the rest, that did aliue remaine ; /
 Whom he likewise right forely did constraine,
 Like scattred sheepe, to seeke for safetie,
 After he gotten had with busie paine
 Some of their weapons, which thereby did lie ;
 With which he layd about, and made them fast to flie.

Whom when the Prince so felly saw to rage,
 Approching to him neare, his hand he stayd,
 And fought, by making signes, him to asswage : 350
 Who them perceiuing, streight to him obeyd,
 As to his Lord, and downe his weapons layd,
 As if he long had to his heafts bene trayned.
 Thence he him brought away, and vp conuayd
 Into the chamber, where that Dame remayned
 With her vnworthy knight, who ill him entertayned.

Whom when the Saluage saw from daunger free,
 Sitting beside his Ladie there at ease,

l. 346, ; for, —substituted.

He well remembred, that the same was hee,
Which lately fought his Lord for to displeafe : 360
Tho all in rage, he on him streight did feaze,
As if he would in peeces him haue rent ;
And were not, that the Prince did him appeaze,
He had not left one limbe of him vnrent :
But streight he held his hand at his commaundement.

Thus hauing all things well in peace ordayned,
The Prince himfelfe there all that night did rest,
Where him *Blandina* fayrely entertayned,
With all the courteous glee and goodly feast,
The which for him she could imagine best. 370
For well she knew the wayes to win good will
Of euery wight, that were not too infest,
And how to please the minds of good and ill, (skill.
Through tempering of her words & lookes by wondrous

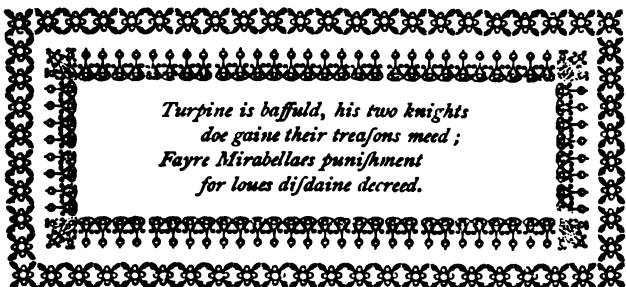
Yet / were her words and lookes but false and fayned,
To some hid end to make more easie way,
Or to allure such fondlings, whom she trayned
Into her trap vnto their owne decay :
Thereto, when needed, she could weepe and pray,
And when her listed, she could fawne and flatter ;
Now smyling smoothly, like to sommers day, 381
Now glooming fadly, so to cloke her matter ;
Yet were her words but wynd, & all her teares but water.

Whether such grace were giuen her by kynd,
As women wont their guilefull wits to gyde ;

Or learn'd the art to please, I doe not fynd.
This well I wote, that she so well applyde
Her pleasing tongue, that soone she pacifyde
The wrathfull Prince, & wrought her husbands peace,
Who nathelesse not therewith fatisfyde, 390
His rancorous despight did not releasse,
Ne secretly from thought of fell reuenge surceasse.

For all that night, the whyles the Prince did rest
In carelesse couch, not weeting what was ment,
He watcht in close awayt with weapons prest,
Willing to worke his villenous intent
On him, that had so shamefully him shent :
Yet durst he not for very cowardize
Effect the same, whylest all the night was spent.
The morrow next the Prince did early rise, 400
And passed forth, to follow his first enterprise. /

Cant. VII.



*Turpine is baffuld, his two knights
doe gaine their treasons meed ;
Fayre Mirabellaes punishment
for loues disdaine decreed.*

Like as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes,
In doing gentle deedes with franke delight,
Euen so the baser mind it selfe displayes,
In cancred malice and reuengefull spight.
For to maligne, t'enuie, t'vse shifting flight, 10
Be arguments of a vile donghill mind ;
Which what it dare not doe by open might,
To worke by wicked treason wayes doth find,
By such discourteous deeds discovering his base kind.

That well appeares in this discourteous knight,
The coward *Turpine*, whereof now I treat ;
Who notwithstanding that in former fight
He of the Prince his life receiued late,
Yet in his mind malitious and ingrate
He gan deuize, to be aueng'd anew 20
For all that shame, which kindled inward hate.

l. 3, ; for , : l. 11, 'dunghill-mind' and ; for ,—accepted.

Therefore so soone as he was out of vew,
Himselfe in haft he arm'd, and did him fast pursew.

Well did he tract his steps, as he did ryde,
Yet would not neare approach in daungers eye,
But kept aloofe for dread to be descryde,
Vntill fit time and place he mote espy,
Where / he mote worke him scath and villeny.
At last he met two knights to him vnknowne,
The which were armed both agreeably, 30
And both combynd, what euer chaunce were blowne,
Betwixt them to diuide, and each to make his owne.

To whom false *Turpine* comming courteously,
To cloke the mischiefe, which he inly ment,
Gan to complaine of great discourtesie,
Which a straunge knight, that neare afore him went,
Had doen to him, and his deare Ladie shent :
Which if they would afford him ayde at need
For to auenge, in time conuenient,
They should accomplish both a knightly deed, 40
And for their paines obtaine of him a goodly meed.

The knights beleeu'd, that all he sayd, was trew,
And being fresh and full of youthly spright,
Were glad to heare of that aduenture new,
In which they mote make triall of their might,
Which neuer yet they had approu'd in fight ;
And eke desirous of the offred meed,
Said then the one of them ; where is that wight,

l. 30, 'armed'—accepted for 'arm'd.'

The which hath doen to thee this wrongfull deed,
That we may it auenge, and punish him with speed ?

He rides (said *Turpine*) there not farre afore, 51
 With a wyld man soft footing by his fyde,
 That if ye list to haste a litle more,
 Ye may him ouertake in timely tyde :
 Eftsoones they pricked forth with forward pryde,
 And ere that litle while they ridden had,
 The gentle Prince not farre away they spyde,
 Ryding a softly pace with portance sad,
 Deuizing of his loue more, then of daunger drad. /

Then one of them aloud vnto him cryde, 60
 Bidding him turne againe, false traytour knight,
 Foule womanwronger, for he him defyde.
 With that they both at once with equall spight
 Did bend their speares, and both with equall might
 Against him ran ; but th'one did misse his marke,
 And being carried with his force forthright,
 Glaunst swiftly by ; like to that heauenly sparke,
 Which glyding through the ayre lights all the heauens
 darke.

But th'other ayming better, did him smite
Full in the shield, with so impetuous powre, 70
That all his launce in peeces shiuered quite,
And scattered all about, fell on the flowre.
But the stout Prince, with much more steddy stowre
Full on his beuer did him strike so sore,
That the cold Steele through piercing, did deuowre

1. 59, 'Loue, more': 1. 72, (*scattered . . . about*).

His vitall breath, and to the ground him bore,
Where still he bathed lay in his owne bloody gore.

As when a cast of Faulcons make their flight
At an Herneshaw, that lyes aloft on wing,
The whyles they strike at him with heedlesse might,
The warie foule his bill doth backward wring ; 81
On which the first, whose force her first doth bring,
Her felfe quite through the bodie doth engore,
And falleth downe to ground like fenfelesse thing,
But th'other not so swift, as she before,
Fayles of her soufe, and passing by doth hurt no more.

By this the other, which was passed by,
Himselfe recouering, was return'd to fight ;
Where when he saw his fellow lifelesse ly,
He much was daunted with so dismall fight ; 90
Yet / nought abating of his former spight,
Let driue at him with so malicious mynd,
As if he would haue passed through him quight :
But the steele-head no stedfast hold could fynd,
But glauncing by, deceiu'd him of that he defynd.

Not so the Prince : for his well learned speare
Tooke surer hould, and from his horses backe
Aboue a launces length him forth did beare,
And gainst the cold hard earth so fore him strake,
That all his bones in peeces nigh he brake. 100
Where seeing him so lie, he left his steed,
And to him leaping, vengeance thought to take
Of him, for all his former follies meed,
With flaming sword in hand his terror more to breed.

The fearefull fwayne beholding death so nie,
Cryde out aloud for mercie him to saue ;
In lieu whereof he would to him descric,
Great treason to him meant, his life to reauē.
The Prince soone hearkned, and his life forgaue.
Then thus said he, There is a straunger knight, 110
The which for promise of great meed, vs draue
To this attempt, to wreake his hid despight,
For that himselfe thereto did want sufficient might.

The Prince much mused at such villenie,
And sayd ; Now sure ye well haue earn'd your meed,
For th'one is dead, and th'other soone shall die,
Vnlesse to me thou hether bring with speed
The wretch, that hyr'd you to this wicked deed.
He glad of life, and willing eke to wreake
The guilt on him, which did this mischiefe breed,
Swore by his sword, that neither day nor weeke 121
He would surceasse, but him, where so he were, would
seeke. /

So vp he rose, and forth streight way he went
Backe to the place, where *Turpine* late he lore ;
There he him found in great astonishment,
To see him so bedight with bloodie gore,
And griesly wounds that him appalled fore.
Yet thus at length he said, how now Sir knight ?
What meaneth this, which here I see before ?
How fortuneth this foule vncomely plight, 130
So different from that, which earst ye seem'd in fight ?

Perdie (said he) in euill houre it fell,
 That euer I for meed did vndertake
 So hard a talke, as life for hyre to sell ;
 The which I earst aduentur'd for your sake.
 Witnesse the wounds, and this wyde bloudie lake,
 Which ye may see yet all about me steeme.
 Therefore now yeeld, as ye did promise make,
 My due reward ; the which right well I deeme
 I yearded haue, that life so dearely did redeeme. 140

But where then is (quoth he halfe wrothfully)
 Where is the bootie, which therefore I bought,
 That curfed caytiue, my strong enemy,
 That recreant knight, whose hated life I fought ?
 And where is eke your friend, which halfe it ought ?
 He lyes (said he) vpon the cold bare ground,
 Slayne of that errant knight, with whom he fought ;
 Whom afterwards my selfe with many a wound
 Did flay againe, as ye may see there in the ffound.

Thereof false *Turpin* was full glad and faine, 150
 And needs with him streight to the place would ryde,
 Where he himselfe might see his foeman slaine ;
 For else his feare could not be satisfyde.
 So / as they rode, he saw the way all dyde
 With streames of bloud ; which tracting by the traile,
 Ere long they came, whereas in euill tyde
 That other swayne, like ashes deadly pale,
 Lay in the lap of death, rewing his wretched bale.

Much did the Crauen seeme to mone his case,
 That for his sake his deare life had forgone ; 160

l. 139, ; for,—accepted : l. 140, 'earned.'

And him bewayling with affection base,
Did counterfeit kind pittie, where was none :
For wheres no courage, theres no ruth nor mone.
Thence passing forth, not farre away he found,
Whereas the Prince himselfe lay all alone,
Loofely displayd vpon the grassie ground,
Possessed of sweete sleepe, that luld him soft in ffound.

Wearie of trauell in his former fight,
He there in shade himselfe had layd to rest,
Hauing his armes and warlike things vndight, 170
Feareleffe of foes that mote his peace molest ;
The whyles his saluage page, that wont be prest,
Was wandred in the wood another way,
To doe some thing, that seemed to him best,
The whyles his Lord in siluer slomber lay,
Like to the Euening starre adorn'd with deawy ray.

Whom when as *Turpin* saw so loofely layd,
He weened well, that he in deed was dead,
Like as that other knight to him had sayd :
But when he nigh approcht, he mote aread 180
Plaine signes in him of life and liuelihead.
Whereat much grieu'd against that straunger knight,
That him too light of credence did mislead,
He would haue backe retyred from that fight,
That was to him on earth the deadliest despight. /

But that same knight would not once let him start,
But plainely gan to him declare the case
Of all his mischiefe, and late lucklesse smart ;
How both he and his fellow there in place

Were vanquished, and put to foule disgrace, 190
 And how that he in lieu of life him lent,
 Had vow'd vnto the victor, him to trace
 And follow through the world, where so he went,
 Till that he him deliuered to his punishment.

He therewith much abashed and affrayd,
 Began to tremble euery limbe and vaine ;
 And softly whispering him, entyrelly prayd,
 T'aduize him better, then by such a traine
 Him to betray vnto a straunger swaine :
 Yet rather counfeld him contrarywise, 200
 Sith he likewise did wrong by him sustaine,
 To ioyne with him and vengeance to deuize,
 Whylest time did offer meanes him sleeping to surprize.

Nathelesse for all his speach, the gentle knight
 Would not be tempted to such villenie,
 Regarding more his faith, which he did plight,
 All were it to his mortall enemye,
 Then to entrap him by false treacherie :
 Great shame in lieges blood to be embrew'd.
 Thus whylest they were debating diuerslie, 210
 The Saluage forth out of the wood issew'd
 Backe to the place, whereas his Lord he sleeping vew'd.

There when he saw those two so neare him stand,
 He doubted much what mote their meaning bee,
 And throwing downe his load out of his hand,
 To weet great store of forrest frute, which hee

Had / for his food late gathered from the tree,
Himselfe vnto his weapon he betooke,
That was an oaken plant, which lately hee
Rent by the root ; which he so sternely shooke, 220
That like an hazell wand, it quiuered and quooke.

Whereat the Prince awaking, when he spyde
The traytour *Turpin* with that other knight,
He started vp, and snatching neare his syde
His trustie sword, the seruant of his might,
Like a fell Lyon leaped to him light,
And his left hand vpon his collar layd.
Therewith the cowheard deaded with affright,
Fell flat to ground, ne word vnto him sayd,
But holding vp his hands, with silence mercie prayd. 230

But he so full of indignation was,
That to his prayer nought he would incline,
But as he lay vpon the humbled gras,
His foot he set on his vile necke, in signe
Of seruile yoke, that nobler harts repine.
Then letting him arise like abiect thrall,
He gan to him obiect his haynous crime,
And to reuile, and rate, and recreant call,
And lastly to despoyle of knightly bannerall.

And after all, for greater infamie, 240
He by the heeles him hung vpon a tree,
And baffuld so, that all which passed by,
The picture of his punishment might see,
And by the like ensample warned bee,
How euer they through treason doe trespasse.
But turne we now backe to that Ladie free,

Whom late we left ryding vpon an Affe,
Led by a Carle and foole, which by her side did passe./

She was a Ladie of great dignitie,
And lifted vp to honorable place, 250
Famous through all the land of Faerie,
Though of meane parentage and kindred base,
Yet deckt with wondrous giftes of natures grace,
That all men did her person much admire,
And praise the feature of her goodly face,
The beames whereof did kindle louely fire
In th' harts of many a knight, and many a gentle squire.

But she thereof grew proud and insolent,
That none she worthie thought to be her fere,
But scornd them all, that loue vnto her ment : 260
Yet was she lou'd of many a worthy pere ;
Vnworthy she to be belou'd so dere,
That could not weigh of worthinesse aright.
For beautie is more glorious bright and clere,
The more it is admir'd of many a wight,
And noblest she, that serued is of noblest knight.

But this coy Damzell thought contrariwise,
That such proud looks would make her prayfed more ;
And that the more she did all loue despize,
The more would wretched louers her adore. 270
What cared she, who fighed for her fore,
Or who did wayle or watch the wearie night ?
Let them that list, their lucklesse lot deplore ;

l. 260, : for ; , and l. 261, ; for ,—accepted.

She was borne free, not bound to any wight,
And so would euer liue, and loue her owne delight.

Through such her stubborne stifnesse, and hard hart,
Many a wretch, for want of remedie,
Did languish long in lifeconsuming smart,
And at the last through dreary dolour die :
Whylest / she, the Ladie of her libertie, 280
Did boast her beautie had such soueraine might,
That with the onely twinkle of her eye,
She could or faue, or spill, whom she would hight.
What could the Gods doe more, but doe it more aright ?

But loe the Gods, that mortall follies vew,
Did worthily reuenge this maydens pride ;
And nought regarding her so goodly hew,
Did laugh at her, that many did deride,
Whilest she did weepe, of no man mercifide.
For on a day, when *Cupid* kept his court, 290
As he is wont at each Saint Valentide,
Vnto the which all louers doe resort,
That of their loues successe they there may make report.

It fortun'd then, that when the roules were red,
In which the names of all loues folke were fyled,
That many there were missing, which were ded,
Or kept in bands, or from their loues exyled,
Or by some other violence despoyled.
Which when as *Cupid* heard, he waxed wroth,
And doubting to be wronged, or beguyled, 300

l. 280, (*the . . . libertie*) : l. 294, '*rolles*' : l. 295, '*wick*.'

He bad his eyes to be vnblindfold both,
That he might see his men, and muster them by oth.

Then found he many missing of his crew,
Which wont doe suit and seruice to his might;
Of whom what was becomen, no man knew.
Thêrefore a Iurie was impaneld streight,
T'enquire of them, whether by force, or sleight,
Or their owne guilt, they were away conuayd.
To whom foule *Infamie*, and fell *Despight*
Gauë euidence, that they were all betrayd, 310
And muredred cruelly by a rebellious Mayd. /

Fayre *Mirabella* was her name, whereby
Of all those crymes she there indited was:
All which when *Cupid* heard, he by and by
In great displeasure, wild a *Capias*
Should issue forth, t'attach that scornefull lasse.
The warrant straight was made, and therewithall
A Baylieffe errant forth in post did passe,
Whom they by name there *Portamore* did call;
He which doth summon louers to Loues iudgement hall.

The damzell was attacht, and shortly brought 321
Vnto the barre, whereas she was arrayned:
But she thereto nould plead, nor answere ought
Euen for stubborne pride, which her restrayned.
So iudgement past, as is by law ordayned
In cases like; which when at last she saw,
Her stubborne hart, which loue before disdayned,
Gan stoupe, and falling downe with humble awe,
Cryde mercie, to abate the extremitie of law.

l. 320, capital L—accepted: l. 326, ; for , —accepted.

The sonne of *Venus* who is myld by kynd, 330
 But where he is prouokt with peeuiſhneſſe,
 Vnto her prayers piteouſly enclynd,
 And did the rigour of his doome repreſſe ;
 Yet not ſo freely, but that natheleſſe
 He vnto her a penance did impoſe :
 Which was, that through this worlds wyde wildernes
 She wander ſhould in companie of thoſe,
 Till ſhe had ſau'd ſo many loues, as ſhe did loſe.

So now ſhe had bene wandring two whole yeares
 Throughout the world, in this vncomely caſe, 340
 Waſting her goodly hew in heauie teares,
 And her good dayes in dolorous diſgrace :
 Yet / had ſhe not in all theſe two yeares ſpace,
 Saued but two ; yet in two yeares before,
 Through her diſpiteous pride, whileſt loue lackt place,
 She had deſtroyed two and twenty more.
 Aie me, how could her loue make half amends there-
 fore.

And now ſhe was vppon the weary way,
 When as the gentle Squire, with faire *Serene*,
 Met her in ſuch miſſeeming foule array ; 350
 The whiles that mighty man did her demeane
 With all the euill termes and cruell meane,
 That he could make ; And eeke that angry foole
 Which follow'd her, with curſed hands vncleane
 Whipping her horſe, did with his ſmarting toole
 Oft whip her dainty ſelfe, and much augment her doole.

L. 335, : for , : L. 336—Dr Morris inadvertently records '*throgħ*' as '96 reading, while it is '*through*': L. 344, ; for ,—accepted.

Ne ought it mote auaile her to entreat
 The one or th'other, better her to vse :
 For both so wilfull were and obstinate,
 That all her piteous plaint they did refuse, 360
 And rather did the more her beate and bruse.
 But most the former villaine, which did lead
 Her tyreling iade, was bent her to abuse ;
 Who though she were with wearinesse nigh dead,
 Yet would not let her lite, nor rest a little stead.

For he was sterne, and terrible by nature,
 And eeke of perfon huge and hideous,
 Exceeding much the measure of mans stature,
 And rather like a Gyant monstuous. 370
 For sooth he was descended of the hous
 Of those old Gyants, which did warres darraine
 Against the heauen in order battailous,
 And sib to great *Orgolio*, which was slaine
 By *Arthure*, when as *Vnas* Knight he did maintaine. /

His lookes were dreadfull, and his fiery eies
 Like two great Beacons, glared bright and wyde,
 Glauncing askew, as if his enemies
 He scorned in his ouerweening pryde ;
 And stalking stately like a Crane, did stryde 380
 At euery step vppon the tiptoes hie,
 And all the way he went, on euery syde
 He gaz'd about, and stared horrible,
 As if he with his lookes would all men terrifie.

He wore no armour, ne for none did care,
 As no whit dreading any liuing wight ;

l. 363, 'tyrling' (1679) : l. 376, (like . . . Beacons).

But in a Iacket quilted richly rare,
Vpon checklaton he was straungely dight,
And on his head a roll of linen plight,
Like to the Mores of Malaber he wore ;
With which his locks, as blacke as pitchy night, 390
Were bound about, and voyded from before,
And in his hand a mighty yron club he bore.

This was *Disdaine*, who led that Ladies horse (plains,
Through thick & thin, through mountains & through
Compelling her, wher she would not by force
Haling her palfrey by the hempen raines.
But that same foole, which most increast her paines,
Was *Scorne*, who hauing in his hand a whip,
Her therewith yirks, and still when she complaines,
The more he laughes, and does her closely quip, 400
To see her fore lament, and bite her tender lip.

Whose cruell handling when that Squire beheld,
And saw those villaines her so vildely vse,
His gentle heart with indignation sweld,
And could no lenger beare so great abuse,
As / such a Lady so to beate and bruse ;
But to him stepping, such a stroke him lent,
That forst him th'halter from his hand to loofe,
And maugre all his might, backe to relent :
Efe had he surely there bene slaine, or fowlyshent.

The villaine wroth for greeting him so fore, 411
Gathered him selfe together soone againe,
And with his yron batton, which he bore,
Let driue at him so dreadfully amaine,

That for his safety he did him constraîne
 To giue him ground, and shift to euery side,
 Rather then once his burden to sustaine :
 For bootelesse thing him seemed, to abide,
 So mighty blowes, or proue the puissaunce of his pride.

Like as a Mastiffe hauing at a bay 420
 A saluage Bull, whose cruell hornes doe threat
 Desperate daunger, if he them assay,
 Traceth his ground, and round about doth beat,
 To spy where he may some aduantage get ;
 The whiles the beast doth rage and loudly rore,
 So did the Squire, the whiles the Carle did fret,
 And fume in his disdainefull mynd the more,
 And oftentimes by Turmagant and Mahound swore.

Nathelesse so sharpcly still he him pursfewd,
 That at aduantage him at last he tooke, 430
 When his foote slipt (that slip he dearely rewd,)
 And with his yron club to ground him strooke ;
 Where still he lay, ne out of swoone awooke,
 Till heauy hand the Carle vpon him layd,
 And bound him fast : Tho when he vp did looke,
 And saw him selfe captiu'd, he was dismayd,
 Ne powre had to withstand, ne hope of any ayd. /

Then vp he made him rise, and forward fare,
 Led in a rope, which both his hands did bynd ;
 Ne ought that foole for pittie did him spare, 440
 But with his whip him following behynd,
 Him often scourg'd, and forst his feete to fynd :
 And other whiles with bitter mockes and mowes
 He would him scorne, that to his gentle mynd

Was much more grieuous, then the others blowes:
Words sharpely wound, but greatest grieve of scorning
growes.

The faire *Serena*, when she saw him fall
Vnder that villaines club, then surely thought
That slaine he was, or made a wretched thrall,
And fled away with all the speede she mought, 450
To seeke for safety, which long time she fought:
And past through many perils by the way,
Ere she againe to *Calepine* was brought;
The which discourse as now I must delay,
Till *Mirabellaes* fortunes I doe further say.

Cant. / VIII.

*Prince Arthure ouercomes Dydaïne,
Quites Mirabell from dreed :
Serena, found of Saluages,
By Calepine is freed.*

YE gentle Ladies, in whose foueraïne powre
Loue hath the glory of his kingdome left,
And in th'hearts of men, as your eternall dowre,
In yron chaines, of liberty bereft,
Deliuered hath into your hands by gift ; 10
Be well aware, how ye the same doe vse,
That pride doe not to tyranny you list ;
Least if men you of cruelty accuse,
He from you take that chiefedome, which ye doe abuse.

And as ye soft and tender are by kynde,
Adornd with goodly gifts of beauties grace,
So be ye soft and tender eeke in mynde ;
But cruelty and hardnesse from you chace,
That all your other praises will deface,
And from you turne the loue of men to hate. 20
Ensamble take of *Mirabellaes* case,

l. 4, , after '*Serena*'—accepted.

Who from the high degree of happy state,
Fell into wretched woes, which she repented late.

Who after thraldome of the gentle Squire,
Which she beheld with lamentable eye,
Was touched with compaffion entire,
And much lamented his calamity, /
That for her fake fell into misery :
Which bootéd nought for prayers, nor for threat
To hope for to releafe or mollify ; 30
For aye the more, that she did them entreat
The more they him mifust, and cruelly did beat.

So as they forward on their way did pas,
Him still reuiling and afflicting fore,
They met Prince *Arthure* with Sir *Enias*,
(That was that courteous Knight, whom he before
Hauing subdew'd, yet did to life restore,)
To whom as they approcht, they gan augment
Their cruelty, and him to punish more,
Scourging and haling him more vehement ; 40
As if it them should grieue to see his punishment.

The Squire him selfe when as he saw his Lord,
The witnesse of his wretchednesse, in place,
Was much asham'd, that with an hempen cord
He like a dog was led in captiue case,
And did his head for bashfulnesse abase,
As loth to see, or to be seene at all :
Shame would be hid. But when as *Enias*
Beheld two such, of two such villaines thrall,
His manly mynde was much emmoued therewithall. 50

And to the Prince thus sayd ; See you Sir Knight,
 The greatest shame that euer eye yet saw ?
 Yond Lady and her Squire with foule despight
 Abuse, against all reason and all law,
 Without regard of pittie or of awe.
 See how they doe that Squire beat and reuile ;
 See how they doe the Lady hale and draw.
 But if ye please to lend me leaue a while,
 I will them soone acquite, and both of blame affoile.

The / Prince assented, and then he streight way 60
 Dismounting light, his shield about him threw,
 With which approching, thus he gan to say ;
 Abide ye caytiue treachetours vntrew,
 That haue with treason thrall'd vnto you
 These two, vnworthy of your wretched bands;
 And now your crime with cruelty purfew.
 Abide, and from them lay your loathly hands ;
 Or else abide the death, that hard before you stands.

The villaine stayd not aunswer to inuent,
 But with his yron club preparing way, 70
 His mindes sad message backe vnto him sent ;
 The which descended with such dreadfull sway,
 That seemed nought the course thereof could stay :
 No more then lightening from the lofty sky.
 Ne list the Knight the powre thereof assay,
 Whose doome was death, but lightly flipping by,
 Vnwares defrauded his intended destiny.

And to requite him with the like againe,
 With his sharpe sword he fiercely at him flew,

And strooke so strongly, that the Carle with paine
Saued him selfe, but that he there him flew : 81
Yet fau'd not so, but that the bloud it drew,
And gaue his foe good hope of victory.
Who therewith fiesht, vpon him set anew,
And with the second stroke, thought certainly
To haue supplyde the first, and paide the vfury.

But Fortune aunswerd not vnto his call ;
For as his hand was heaued vp on hight,
The villaine met him in the middle fall,
And with his club bet backe his brondyron bright /
So forcibly, that with his owne hands might 91
Rebeaten backe vpon him selfe againe,
He driuen was to ground in selfe despight ;
From whence ere he recouery could gaine,
He in his necke had set his foote with fell disdaine.

With that the foole, which did that end awayte,
Came running in, and whilest on ground he lay,
Laide heauy hands on him, and held so straye,
That downe he kept him with his scornefull sway,
So as he could not weld him any way. 100
The whiles that other villaine went about
Him to haue bound, and thrald without delay ;
The whiles the foole did him reuile and flout,
Threatning to yoke them tow & tame their corage stout.

As when a sturdy ploughman with his hynde
By strength haue ouerthrowne a stubborne steare,
They downe him hold, and fast with cords do bynde,
Till they him force the buxome yoke to beare :

So did theſe two this Knight oft tug and teare.
 Which when the Prince beheld, there ſtanding by,
 He left his lofty ſteede to aide him neare, 111
 And buckling ſoone him ſelfe, gan fiercely fly
 Vppon that Carle, to ſaue his friend from ieopardy.

The villaine leauing him vnto his mate
 To be captiu'd, and handled as he liſt,
 Himſelfe addreſt vnto this new debate,
 And with his club him all about ſo bliſt,
 That he which way to turne him ſcarcelly wiſt :
 Sometimes aloſt he layd, ſometimes alow ;
 Now here, now there, and oft him neare he miſt ;
 So doubtfully, that hardly one could know 121
 Whether more wary were to giue or ward the blow.

But / yet the Prince ſo well enured was
 With ſuch huge ſtrokes, approued oft in fight,
 That way to them he gaue forth right to paſ.
 Ne would endure the daunger of their might,
 But wayt aduantage, when they downe did light.
 At laſt the caytiue after long diſcourſe,
 When all his ſtrokes he ſaw auoyded quite,
 Reſolued in one t'aſſemble all his force, 130
 And make one end of him without ruth or remorſe.

His dreadfull hand he heaued vp aloſt,
 And with his dreadfull inſtrument of yre,
 Thought ſure haue pownded him to powder ſoft,
 Or deepe emboweld in the earth entyre :
 But Fortune did not with his will conſpire.
 For ere his ſtroke attained his intent,

The noble childe preuenting his desire,
 Vnder his club with wary boldnesse went,
 And smote him on the knee, that neuer yet was bent.

It neuer yet was bent, ne bent it now, 141
 Albe the stroke so strong and puissant were,
 That seem'd a marble pillour it could bow :
 But all that leg, which did his body beare,
 It crackt throughout, yet did no bloud appeare ;
 So as it was vnable to support
 So huge a burden on such broken geare,
 But fell to ground, like to a lumpe of durt ;
 Whence he assayd to rife, but could not for his hurt.

Estfoones the Prince to him full nimble stept, 150
 And leaft he should recouer foote againe,
 His head meant from his shoulders to haue swept.
 Which when the Lady saw, she cryde amaine ; /
 Stay stay, Sir Knight, for loue of God abstaine,
 From that vnwares ye weetelesse doe intend ;
 Slay not that Carle, though worthy to be slaine :
 For more on him doth then him selfe depend ;
 My life will by his death haue lamentable end.

He staide his hand according her desire,
 Yet nathemore him suffred to arize ; 160
 But still suppressing gan of her inquire,
 What meaning mote those vncouth words comprize,
 That in that villaines health her safety lies :
 That, were no might in man, nor heart in Knights,
 Which durst her dreaded reskue enterprize,

l. 143, : for ,—accepted, and l. 148, ; for , : l. 155, 'From' accepted
 for 'For' of 1596.

Yet heauens them felues, that fauour feeble rights,
Would for it felfe redrefse, and punish fuch defpights.

Then burfting forth in teares, which gushed fast
Like many water streames, a while ſhe ſtayd ;
Till the ſharpe paſſion being ouerpast 170
Her tongue to her reſtord, then thus ſhe ſayd ;
Nor heauens, nor men can me moſt wretched mayd
Deliuier from the doome of my deſart,
The which the God of loue hath on me layd,
And damned to endure this direfull ſmart,
For penance of my proud and hard rebellious hart.

In prime of youthly yeares, when firſt the flowre
Of beauty gan to bud, and blooſme delight,
And nature me endu'd with plenteous dowre,
Of all her gifts, that pleaſde each liuing fight, 180
I was belou'd of many a gentle Knight,
And ſude and fought with all the ſeruice dew :
Full many a one for me deepe groand and fight,
And to the dore of death for forrow drew,
Complayning out on me, that would not on them rew.

But / let them loue that liſt, or liue or die ;
Me liſt not die for any louers doole :
Ne liſt me leaue my loued libertie,
To pittie him that liſt to play the foole :
To loue my ſelfe I learned had in ſchoole. 190
Thus I triumphed long in louers paine,
And fitting careleſſe on the ſcorners ſtoole,
Did laugh at thoſe that did lament and plaine :
But all is now repayd with intereſt againe.

For loe the winged God, that woundeth harts,
Causde me be called to accompt therefore,
And for reuengement of those wrongfull smarts,
Which I to others did inflict afore,
Addeem'd me to endure this penaunce fore ;
That in this wize, and this vnmeete array, 200
With these two lewd companions, and no more,
Disdaine and *Scorne*, I through the world should stray,
Till I haue sau'd so many, as I earst did slay.

Certes (sayd then the Prince) the God is iust,
That taketh vengeance of his peoples spoile.
For were no law in loue, but all that lust,
Might them oppresse, and painefully turmoile,
His kingdome would continue but a while.
But tell me Lady, wherefore doe you beare
This bottle thus before you with such toile, 210
And eeke this wallet at your backe arreare,
That for these Carles to carry much more comely were?

Here in this bottle (sayd the fory Mayd)
I put the teares of my contrition,
Till to the brim I haue it full defrayd :
And in this bag which I behinde me don, /
I put repentaunce for things past and gon.
Yet is the bottle leake, and bag so torne,
That all which I put in, fals out anon ;
And is behinde me trodden downe of *Scorne*, 220
Who mocketh all my paine, & laughs the more I mourn.

The Infant hearkned wisely to her tale,
And wondred much at *Cupids* iudg'ment wise,

That could so meekly make proud hearts auale,
 And wreake him selfe on them, that him despise.
 Then suffred he *Disdaine* vp to arise,
 Who was not able vp him selfe to reare,
 By meanes his leg through his late lucklesse prife,
 Was crackt in twaine, but by his foolish feare
 Was holpen vp, who him supported standing neare. 230

But being vp, he lookt againe aloft,
 As if he neuer had receiued fall ;
 And with sterne eye-browes stared at him oft,
 As if he would haue daunted him with all :
 And standing on his tiptoes, to seeme tall,
 Downe on his golden feete he often gazed,
 As if such pride the other could apall ;
 Who was so far from being ought amazed,
 That he his lookes despised, and his boast dispraized.

Then turning backe vnto that captiue thrall, 240
 Who all this while stood there beside them bound,
 Vnwillling to be knowne, or seene at all,
 He from those bands weend him to haue vnwound.
 But when approching neare, he plainly found,
 It was his owne true groome, the gentle Squire,
 He thereat wext exceedingly astound,
 And him did oft embrace, and oft admire,
 Ne could with feeling fatisfie his great desire.

Meane / while the Saluage man, when he beheld
 That huge great foole oppressing th'other Knight, 250

Whom with his weight vnweldy downe he held,
He flew vpon him, like a greedy kight
Vnto some carrion offered to his sight,
And downe him plucking, with his nayles and teeth
Gan him to hale, and teare, and scratch, and bite ;
And from him taking his owne whip, therewith
So fore him scourgeth, that the bloud downe followeth.

And sure I weene, had not the Ladies cry
Procur'd the Prince his cruell hand to stay,
He would with whipping, him haue done to dye: 260
But being checkt, he did abstaine streight way,
And let him rise. Then thus the Prince gan say ;
Now Lady sith your fortunes thus dispose,
That if ye list haue liberty, ye may,
Vnto your selfe I freely leaue to chose,
Whether I shall you leaue, or from these villaines lose.

Ah nay Sir Knight (sayd she) it may not be,
But that I needes must by all meanes fulfill
This penance, which enioyned is to me,
Least vnto me betide a greater ill ; 270
Yet no lesse thanks to you for your good will.
So humbly taking leaue, she turnd aside,
But *Arthur* with the rest, went onward still
On his first quest : in which did him betide
A great aduenture, which did him from them deuide.

But first it falleth me by course to tell
Of faire *Serena* : who as earst you heard,

l. 274, : for ,—accepted : and so l. 277.

When first the gentle Squire at variaunce fell
 With those two Carles, fled fast away, afeard /
 Of villany to be to her inferd : 280
 So fresh the image of her former dread,
 Yet dwelling in her eye, to her appeard,
 That euery foote did tremble, which did tread,
 And euery body two, and two she foure did read.

Through hils & dales, through bushes & through breres
 Long thus she fled, till that at last she thought
 Her selfe now past the perill of her feares.
 Then looking round about, and seeing nought,
 Which doubt of daunger to her offer mought,
 She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine, 290
 And fitting downe, her selfe a while bethought
 Of her long trauell and turmoyling paine ;
 And often did of loue, and oft of lucke complaine.

And euermore she blamed *Calepine*,
 The good Sir *Calepine*, her owne true Knight,
 As th'onely author of her wofull tine :
 For being of his loue to her so light,
 As her to leaue in such a piteous plight.
 Yet neuer Turtle truer to his make,
 Then he was tride vnto his Lady bright : 300
 Who all this while endured for her sake,
 Great perill of his life, and restlesse paines did take.

Tho when as all her plaints, she had displayd,
 And well disburdened her engrieued brest,
 Vpon the grasse her selfe adowne she layd ;
 Where being tyrde with trauell, and opprest

With sorrow, she betooke her selfe to rest.
There whilest in *Morpheus* bosome safe she lay,
Fearelesse of ought, that mote her peace molest,
False Fortune did her safety betray, 310
Vnto a straunge mischaunce, that menac'd her decay.

In / these wyldc deserts, where she now abode,
There dwelt a saluage nation, which did liue
Of stealth and spoile, and making nightly rode
Into their neighbours borders ; ne did giue
Them selues to any trade, as for to driue
The painefull plough, or cattell for to breed,
Or by aduentrous marchandize to thriue ;
But on the labours of poore men to feed,
And serue their owne necessities with others need. 320

Thereto they vſde one most accurſed order,
To eate the flesh of men, whom they mote fynde,
And ſtraungers to deuoure, which on their border
Were brought by errour, or by wreckfull wynde.
A monſtrous cruelty gainſt courſe of kynde.
They towards euening wandring euery way,
To ſeeke for booty, came by fortune blynde,
Whereas this Lady, like a ſheepe aſtray,
Now drowned in the depth of ſleepe all feareleſſe lay.

Soone as they ſpide her, Lord what gladfull glee 330
They made amongſt them ſelues ; but when her face
Like the faire yuory ſhining they did ſee,
Each gan his fellow ſolace and embrace,

ll. 316-18, (as . . . *thriue*) : l. 327, (by . . . *blind*).

For ioy of such good hap by heauenly grace.
 Then gan they to deuize what courſe to take :
 Whether to ſlay her there vpon the place,
 Or ſuffer her out of her ſleepe to wake,
 And then her eate attonce ; or many meales to make.

The beſt aduizement was of bad, to let her
 Sleepe out her fill, without encomberment : 340
 For ſleepe they fayd would make her battill better.
 Then when ſhe wakt, they all gaue one conſent, /
 That ſince by grace of God ſhe there was ſent,
 Vnto their God they would her ſacrifice ;
 Whoſe ſhare, her guiltleſſe bloud they would preſent,
 But of her dainty fleſh they did deuize
 To make a common feaſt, & feed with gurmandize.

So round about her they them ſelues did place
 Vpon the graſſe, and diuerſely diſpoſe,
 As each thought beſt to ſpend the lingring ſpace. 350
 Some with their eyes the dainteſt morſels choſe ;
 Some praife her paps, ſome praife her lips and noſe ;
 Some whet their kniues, and ſtrip their elboes bare :
 The Prieſt him ſelfe a garland doth compoſe
 Of fineſt flowres, and with full buſie care
 His bloudy veſſels waſh, and holy fire prepare.

The Damzell wakes : then all attonce vpſtart,
 And round about her flocke, like many flies,
 Whooping, and hallowing on euey part,
 As if they would haue rent the braſen ſkies. 360

l. 343, '*ſith*': l. 344. ; for ,—accepted: l. 351, '*daintiſt*': l. 357,
 : for ,—accepted: l. 359, '*hollowing*.'

Which when she sees with ghastly griefful eies,
Her heart does quake, and deadly pallid hew
Benumbes her cheekes : Then out aloud she cries,
Where none is nigh to heare, that will her rew,
And rends her golden locks, and snowy brests embrew.

But all bootes not : they hands vpon her lay ;
And first they spoile her of her iewls deare,
And afterwards of all her rich array ;
The which amongst them they in peeces teare,
And of the pray each one a part doth beare.
Now being naked, to their sordid eyes 371
The goodly threasures of nature appeare :
Which as they view with lustfull fantasyes,
Each wisheth to him selfe, and to the rest enuyes.

Her / yuorie necke, her alablaster brest,
Her paps, which like white filken pillowes were,
For loue in soft delight thereon to rest ;
Her tender fides, her bellie white and clere,
Which like an Altar did it selfe vprere,
To offer sacrifice diuine thereon ; 380
Her goodly thighes, whose glorie did appeare
Like a triumphall Arch, and thereupon
The spoiles of Princes hang'd, which were in battel won.

Those daintie parts, the dearlings of delight,
Which mote not be prophan'd of common eyes,
Those villeins vew'd with loose lasciuious sight,
And closely tempted with their craftie spyes ;

l. 370, '*prey*' : l. 378, , after '*fides*'--accepted.

And some of them gan mongft themfelues deuize,
 Thereof by force to take their beaftly pleafure.
 But them the Priest rebuking, did aduize 390
 To dare not to pollute fo facred threafure,
 Vow'd to the gods: religiõ held euen theeues in meafure.

So being stayd, they her from thence directed
 Vnto a little groue not farre afyde,
 In which an altar fhortly they erected,
 To flay her on. And now the Euentyde
 His brode black wings had through the heauens wyde
 By this difpred, that was the tyme ordayned
 For fuch a difmall deed, their guilt to hyde :
 Of few greene turfes an altar foone they fayned, 400
 And deckt it all with flowres, which they nigh hand ob-
 tayned.

Tho when as all things readie were aright,
 The Damzell was before the altar fet,
 Being alreadie dead with fearefull fright.
 To whom the Priest with naked armes full net /
 Approching nigh, and murderous knife well whet,
 Gan mutter clofe a certaine fecret charme,
 With other diuelifh ceremonies met :
 Which doen he gan aloft t'aduance his arme,
 Whereat they fhouted all, and made a loud
 alarme. 410

Then gan the bagpipes and the hornes to fhriill,
 And fhrieke aloud, that with the peoples voyce
 Confused, did the ayre with terror fill,
 And made the wood to tremble at the noyce :
 The whyles ſhe wayld, the more they did reioyce.

Now mote ye vnderstand that to this groue
 Sir *Calepine* by chaunce, more then by choyce,
 The selfe fame euening fortune hether droue,
 As he to feeke *Serena* through the woods did roue.

Long had he fought her, and through many a foyle 420
 Had traueled still on foot in heauie armes,
 Ne ought was tyred with his endlesse toyles,
 Ne ought was feared of his certaine harmes :
 And now all weetlesse of the wretched stormes,
 In which his loue was lost, he slept full fast,
 Till being waked with these loud alarmes,
 He lightly started vp like one aghast,
 And catching vp his arms streight to the noife forth paft.

There by th'vncertaine glims of starry night,
 And by the twinkling of their sacred fire, 430
 He mote perceiue a litle dawning fight
 Of all, which there was doing in that quire :
 Mongst whom a woman spoyld of all attire
 He spyde, lamenting her vnluckie strife,
 And groning sore from grieued hart entire ;
 Eftfoones he saw one with a naked knife
 Readie to launch her brest, and let out loued life.

With / that he thrusts into the thickest throng,
 And euen as his right hand adowne descends,
 He him preuenting, layes on earth along, 440
 And sacrificeth to th'infernall feeds.

l. 422, '*toyle*'—another of Spenser's neglects, so hard for the Purists and finical : l. 429, '*glimfe*' : l. 437, '*launce*.'

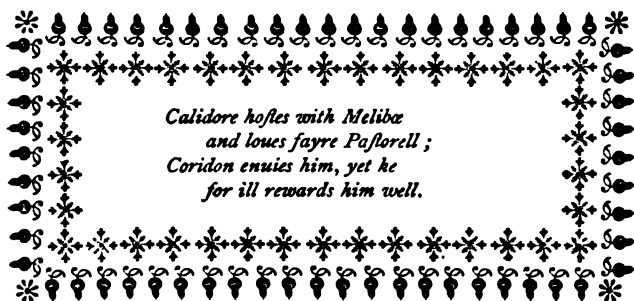
Then to the rest his wrathfull hand he bends ;
Of whom he makes such hauocke and such hew,
That swarmes of damned foules to hell he sends :
The rest that scape his sword and death eschew,
Fly like a flocke of doues before a Faulcons view.

From them returning to that Ladie backe,
Whom by the Altar he doth fitting find,
Yet fearing death, and next to death the lacke
Of clothes to couer, what shee ought by kind : 450
He first her hands beginneth to vnbind,
And then to question of her present woe ;
And afterwards to cheare with speeches kind.
But she for nought that he could say or doe,
One word durst speake, or answere him a whit thereto.

So inward shame of her vncomely case
She did conceiue, through care of womanhood,
That though the night did couer her disgrace,
Yet she in so vnwomanly a mood,
Would not bewray the state in which she stood. 460
So all that night to him vnknown she past.
But day, that doth discouer bad and good,
Ensewing, made her knownen to him at last :
The end whereof Ile keepe vntill another cast.

l. 442, ; for —accepted ; l. 450, 'shee' for 'they' of '96—accepted :
ib., ; for —substituted ; and l. 451, , for ; .

Cant. IX.



Now turne againe my teme thou iolly fwayne,
 Backe to the furrow which I lately left ;
 I lately left a furrow, one or twayne
 Vnplough'd, the which my coulter hath not cleft :
 Yet seem'd the soyle both fayre and frutefull est, 10
 As I it past, that were too great a shame,
 That so rich frute should be from vs bereft ;
 Befide the great dishonour and defame,
 Which should befall to *Calidores* immortall name.

Great trauell hath the gentle *Calidore*
 And toyle endured, sith I left him last
 Sewing the *Blatant beast* ; which I forbore
 To finish then, for other present hast.
 Full many pathes and perils he hath past, (plaines
 Through hils, through dales, throug forests, & throug
 In that fame quest which Fortune on him cast, 20

Which he atchieued to his owne great gaines,
Reaping eternall glorie of his restlesse paines.

So sharply he the Monster did purfew,
That day nor night he suffred him to rest,
Ne rested he himselfe but natures dew,
For dread of daunger, not to be redrest,
If / he for slouth forslackt so famous quest.
Him first from court he to the citties coursed,
And from the citties to the townes him prest, 30
And from the townes into the countrie forsed,
And from the country back to priuate farmes he scorfed.

From thence into the open fields he fled,
Whereas the Heardes were keeping of their neat,
And shepheards finging to their flockes, that fed,
Layes of sweete loue and youthes delightfull heat :
Him thether eke for all his fearefull threat
He followed fast, and chaced him so nie,
That to the folds, where sheepe at night doe feat,
And to the litle cots, where shepherds lie 40
In winters wrathfull time, he forced him to flie.

There on a day as he purfew'd the chace,
He chaunst to spy a sort of shepheard groomes,
Playing on pypes, and caroling apace,
The whyles their beasts there in the budded broomes
Beside them fed, and nipt the tender bloomes :
For other worldly wealth they cared nought.
To whom Sir *Calidore* yet sweating comes,

l. 21, capital F—accepted : l. 26, (*but . . . dew*) : l. 37, '*thither*,' and so l. 50; and (*for . . . threat*) : l. 41, '*time*'—Church and Upton suggest '*time*.'

And them to tell him courteously befought,
If such a beast they saw, which he had thether brought.

They answer'd him, that no such beast they saw, 51
Nor any wicked feend, that mote offend
Their happie flockes, nor daunger to them draw :
But if that such there were (as none they kend)
They prayd high God them farre from them to fend.
Then one of them him seeing so to sweat,
After his rusticke wife, that well he weend,
Offred him drinke, to quench his thirstie heat,
And if he hungry were, him offred eke to eat. /

The knight was nothing nice, where was no need, 60
And tooke their gentle offer : so adowne
They prayd him fit, and gaue him for to feed
Such homely what, as serues the fimple clowne,
That doth despise the dainties of the towne.
Tho hauing fed his fill, he there besyde
Saw a faire damzell, which did weare a crowne
Of fundry flowres, with filken ribbands tyde,
Yclad in home-made greene that her owne hands had
dyde.

Vpon a litle hillocke she was placed
Higher then all the rest, and round about 70
Enuiron'd with a girland, goodly graced,
Of louely lasses, and them all without
The lustie shepheard swaynes fate in a rout ;
The which did pype and sing her prayes dew,
And oft reioyce, and oft for wonder shout,

l. 57, (*that . . . weend* . 67, , for .—accepted: l. 73, ; for ,—
substituted.

As if some miracle of heauenly hew
Were downe to them descended in that earthly vew.

And soothly sure she was full fayre of face,
And perfectly well shapt in euery lim,
Which she did more augment with modest grace, 80
And comely carriage of her count'nance trim,
That all the rest like lesser lamps did dim :
Who her admiring as some heauenly wight,
Did for their foueraine goddesse her esteeme,
And caroling her name both day and night,
The sayrest *Pastorella* her by name did hight.

Ne was there heard, ne was there shepheards swayne
But her did honour, and eke many a one
Burnt in her loue, and with sweet pleasing payne
Full many a night for her did sigh and grone : 90
But / most of all the shepheard *Coridon*
For her did languish, and his deare life spend ;
Yet neither she for him, nor other none
Did care a whit, ne any liking lend :
Though meane her lot, yet higher did her mind ascend.

Her whyles Sir *Calidore* there vewed well,
And markt her rare demeanure, which him seemed
So farre the meane of shepheards to excell,
As that he in his mind her worthy deemed,
To be a Princes Paragone esteemed ; 100
He was vnwares surpris'd in subtile bands
Of the blynd boy, ne thence could be redeemed

By any skill out of his cruell hands ;
Caught like the bird, which gazing still on others stands.

So stood he still long gazing thereupon,
Ne any will had thence to moue away,
Although his quest were farre afore him gon ;
But after he had fed, yet did he stay,
And fate there still, vntill the flying day
Was farre forth spent, discourfing diuerfly 110
Of fundry things, as fell, to worke delay ;
And euermore his speach he did apply
To th'heards, but meant them to the damzels fantasy.

By this the moystie night approaching fast,
Her deawy humour gan on th'earth to shed,
That warn'd the shepheards to their homes to hast
Their tender flocks, now being fully fed,
For feare of wetting them before their bed ;
Then came to them a good old aged fyre,
Whose siluer lockes bedeckt his beard and hed, 120
With shepheards hooke in hand, and fit attyre,
That wild the damzell rise ; the day did now expyre. /

He was to weet by common voice esteemed
The father of the fayrest *Pastorell*,
And of her selfe in very deede so deemed ;
Yet was not so, but as old stories tell
Found her by fortune, which to him befell,
In th'open fields an Infant left alone,
And taking vp brought home, and nourfed well

l. 103, ; for, —accepted: l. 111, , after 'fell'—accepted: l. 122, 'will d.'

As his owne chyld ; for other he had none, 130
That she in tract of time accompted was his owne.

She at his bidding meekely did arise,
And streight vnto her litle flocke did fare :
Then all the rest about her rose likewise,
And each his fundrie sheepe with feuerall care
Gathered together, and them homeward bare :
Whylest euerie one with helping hands did striue
Amongst themselues, and did their labours share,
To helpe faire *Pastorella*, home to driue
Her fleecie flocke ; but *Coridon* most helpe did giue.

But *Melibæ* (so hight that good old man) 141
Now seeing *Calidore* left all alone,
And night arriued hard at hand, began
Him to inuite vnto his simple home ;
Which though it were a cottage clad with lome,
And all things therein meane, yet better so
To lodge, then in the saluage fields to come.
The knight full gladly soone agreed thereto,
Being his harts owne wish, and home with him did go.

There he was welcom'd of that honest fyre, 150
And of his aged Beldame homely well ;
Who him besought himselfe to disattyre,
And rest himselfe, till supper time befell.
By / which home came the fayrest *Pastorell*,
After her flocke she in their fold had tyde :
And supper readie dight, they to it fell

With small adoe, and nature satisfyde,
The which doth litle craue contented to abyde.

Tho when they had their hunger slaked well,
And the fayre mayd the table ta'ne away, 160
The gentle knight, as he that did excell
In courtesie, and well could doe and fay,
For so great kindnesse as he found that day,
Gan greatly thanke his host and his good wife ;
And drawing thence his speach another way,
Gan highly to commend the happie life,
Which Shepheards lead, without debate or bitter strife.

How much (sayd he) more happie is the state,
In which ye father here doe dwell at ease,
Leading a life so free and fortunate, 170
From all the tempests of these worldly seas,
Which tosse the rest in daungerous diseafe ?
Where warres, and wreckes, and wicked enmitie
Doe them afflict, which no man can appease ;
That certes I your happinesse enuie,
And wish my lot were plast in such felicitie.

Surely my sonne (then answer'd he againe)
If happie, then it is in this intent,
That hauing small, yet doe I not complaine
Of want, ne wish for more it to augment, 180
But doe my selfe, with that I haue, content ;
So taught of nature, which doth litle need
Of forreine helpes to lifes due nourishment :
The fields my food, my flocke my rayment breed ;
No better doe I weare, no better doe I feed.

Therefore I doe not any one enuy,
 Nor am enuyde of any one therefore ;
 They that haue much, feare much to loofe thereby,
 And store of cares doth follow riches store.
 The litle that I haue growes dayly more 190
 Without my care, but onely to attend it ;
 My lambes doe euery yeare increafe their fcore,
 And my flockes father daily doth amend it. (it?
 What haue I, but to praife th' Almighty, that doth fend

To them, that lift, the worlds gay shoves I leaue,
 And to great ones fuch follies doe forgiue,
 Which oft through pride do their owne perill weaue,
 And through ambition downe themfelues doe driue
 To fad decay, that might contented liue.
 Me no fuch cares nor combrous thoughts offend, 200
 Ne once my minds vnmoued quiet griue,
 But all the night in filuer sleepe I fpend,
 And all the day, to what I lift, I doe attend.

Sometimes I hunt the Fox, the vowed foe
 Vnto my Lambes, and him diflodge away ;
 Sometime the fawne I praetife from the Doe,
 Or from the Goat her kidde how to conuay ;
 Another while I baytes and nets difplay,
 The birds to catch, or fifhes to beguyle :
 And when I wearie am, I downe doe lay 210
 My limbes in euery fhade, to reft from toyle, (boyle.
 And drinke of euery brooke, when thirft my throte doth

The time was once, in my firft prime of yeares,
 When pride of youth forth pricked my defire,

That I difdain'd amongst mine equall peares
To follow sheepe, and shepheards base attire :
For / further fortune then I would inquire.
And leauing home, to roiall court I fought ;
Where I did sell my felfe for yearely hire,
And in the Princes gardin daily wrought : 220
There I beheld fuch vaineneffe, as I neuer thought.

With fight whereof foone cloyd, and long deluded
With idle hopes, which them doe entertaine,
After I had ten yeares my felfe excluded
From natiue home, and fpend my youth in vaine,
I gan my follies to my felfe to plaine,
And this sweet peace, whose lacke did then appeare.
Tho backe returning to my sheepe againe,
I from thenceforth haue learn'd to loue more deare
This lowly quiet life, which I inherite here. 230

Whyleft thus he talkt, the knight with greedy eare
Hong ftill vpon his melting mouth attent ;
Whose fenfefull words empierft his hart so neare,
That he was rapt with double rauifhment,
Both of his fpeech that wrought him great content,
And alfo of the obieft of his vew,
On which his hungry eye was alwayes bent ;
That twixt his pleafing tongue and her faire hew,
He loft himfelfe, and like one halfe entraunced grew.

Yet to occafion meanes, to worke his mind, 240
And to infinuate his harts defire,
He thus replyde ; Now furely fyre, I find,
That all this worlds gay showes, which we admire,

Be but vaine shadowes to this safe retyre
 Of life, which here in lowlinesse ye lead,
 Fearelesse of foes, or fortunes wrackfull yre,
 Which tosseeth states, and vnder foot doth tread
 The mightie ones, affrayd of euerie chaunges dread. /

That euen I which daily doe behold
 The glorie of the great, mongst whom I won, 250
 And now haue prou'd, what happinesse ye hold
 In this small plot of your dominion,
 Now loath great Lordship and ambition ;
 And wish th'heauens so much had graced mee,
 As graunt me liue in like condition ;
 Or that my fortunes might transposed bee
 From pitch of higher place, vnto this low degree.

In vaine (saied then old *Melibæ*) doe men
 The heauens of their fortunes fault accuse,
 Sith they know best, what is the best for them : 260
 For they to each such fortune doe diffuse,
 As they doe know each can most aptly vse.
 For not that, which men couet most, is best,
 Nor that thing worst, which men do most refuse ;
 But fittest is, that all contented rest
 With that they hold : each hath his fortune in his
 brest.

It is the mynd, that maketh good or ill,
 That maketh wretch or happie, rich or poore :
 For some, that hath abundance at his will,
 Hath not enough, but wants in greatest store ; 270
 And other that hath litle, askes no more,

But in that litle is both rich and wife.
For wisedome is most riches ; fooles therefore
They are, which fortunes doe by vowes deuize,
Sith each vnto himselfe his life may fortunize.

Since then in each mans self (saide *Culidore*)
It is, to fashon his owne lyfes estate,
Giue leaue awhyle, good father, in this shore
To rest my barcke, which hath bene beaten late 280
With / stormes of fortune and tempestuous fate,
In seas of troubles and of toylefome paine,
That whether quite from them for to retrate
I shall resolue, or backe to turne againe,
I may here with your selfe some small repose obtaine.

Not that the burden of so bold a guesst
Shall chargefull be, or chaunge to you at all ;
For your meane food shall be my daily feast,
And this your cabin both my bowre and hall.
Besides for recompence hereof, I shall 290
You well reward, and golden guerdon giue,
That may perhaps you better much withall,
And in this quiet make you safer liue.
So forth he drew much gold, and toward him it driue.

But the good man, nought tempted with the offer
Of his rich mould, did thrust it farre away,
And thus bespake ; Sir knight, your bounteous proffe
Be farre fro me, to whom ye ill display
That mucky masse, the cause of mens decay,
That mote empaire my peace with daungers dread.
But if ye algates couet to assay 301

This fimple fort of life, that shepheards lead,
Be it your owne : our rudeneffe to your felfe aread.

So there that night Sir *Calidore* did dwell,
And long while after, whilest him list remaine,
Dayly beholding the fayre *Pastorell*,
And feeding on the bayt of his owne bane.
During which time he did her entertaine
With all kind courtesies, he could inuent ;
And euery day, her companie to gaine, 310
When to the field she went, he with her went :
So for to quench his fire, he did it more augment. /

But she that neuer had acquainted beene
With such queint vsage, fit for Queenes and Kings,
Ne euer had such knightly seruice seene,
But being bred vnder base shepheards wings,
Had euer learn'd to loue the lowly things,
Did litle whit regard his courteous guize,
But cared more for *Colins* carolings
Then all that he could doe, or euer deuize : 320
His layes, his loues, his lookes she did them all despize.

Which *Calidore* perceiuing, thought it best
To chaunge the manner of his loftie looke ;
And doffing his bright armes, himselfe addrest
In shepheards weed, and in his hand he tooke,
In stead of steelehead speare, a shepheards hooke ;
That who had seene him then, would haue bethought
On *Phrygian Paris* by *Plexippus* brooke,

ll. 316-17 within () : l. 320, 'ev'r' : l. 324—Church suggests 'he drift' :
l. 326, ; for ,—accepted : l. 329, 'O.nons,' as suggested by Hughes, ac-
cepted for 'Benone' of '96, 1609, etc.

When he the loue of fayre *Oenone* fought,
What time the golden apple was vnto him brought. 330

So being clad, vnto the fields he went
With the faire *Pastorella* euery day,
And kept her sheepe with diligent attent,
Watching to driue the rauenuous Wolfe away,
The whilest at pleafure she mote sport and play ;
And euery euening helping them to fold :
And otherwhiles for need, he did assay
In his strong hand their rugged teats to hold,
And out of them to presse the milke : loue so much
could.

Which feeling *Coridon*, who her likewife 340
Long time had lou'd, and hop'd her loue to gaine,
He much was troubled at that straungers guize,
And many gealous thoughts conceiu'd in vaine,
That / this of all his labour and long paine
Should reap the haruest, ere it ripened were ;
That made him scoule, and pout, and oft complaine
Of *Pastorell* to all the shepheards there,
That she did loue a stranger fwayne then him more dere.

And euer when he came in companie,
Where *Calidore* was present, he would loure, 350
And byte his lip, and euen for gealoufie
Was readie oft his owne hart to deuoure,
Impatient of any paramoure :
Who on the other fide did seeme so farre
From malicing, or grudging his good houre,

That all he could, he graced him with her,
Ne euer shewed signe of rancour or of iarre.

And oft, when *Coridon* vnto her brought
Or litle sparrowes, stolen from their nest,
Or wanton squirrels, in the woods farre sought, 360
Or other daintie thing for her addrest,
He would commend his guift, and make the best
Yet she no whit his presents did regard,
Ne him could find to fancie in her brest :
This newcome shepheard had his market mard.
Old loue is litle worth when new is more prefard.

One day when as the shepheard fwaynes together
Were met, to make their sports and merrie glee,
As they are wont in faire sunshynie weather,
The whiles their flockes in shadowes shrouded bee,
They fell to daunce : then did they all agree, 371
That *Colin Clout* should pipe as one most fit ;
And *Calidore* should lead the ring, as hee
That most in *Pastorellaes* grace did fit.
Thereat frown'd *Coridon*, and his lip closely bit. /

But *Calidore* of courteous inclination
Tooke *Coridon*, and set him in his place,
That he should lead the daunce, as was his fashion ;
For *Coridon* could daunce, and trimly trace.
And when as *Pastorella*, him to grace, 380
Her flowry garlond tooke from her owne head,
And plaft on his, he did it soone displace,
And did it put on *Coridons* in stead :
Then *Coridon* woxe frolicke, that earft seemed dead.

l. 372, capital C—accepted in 'Clout.'

Another time, when as they did dispose
To practise games, and maisteries to try,
They for their Iudge did *Pastorella* chose ;
A garland was the meed of victory.
There *Coridon* forth stepping openly,
Did challenge *Calidore* to wrestling game : 390
For he through long and perfect industry,
Therein well practis'd was, and in the same
Thought sure t'auenge his grudge, & worke his foe great
shame.

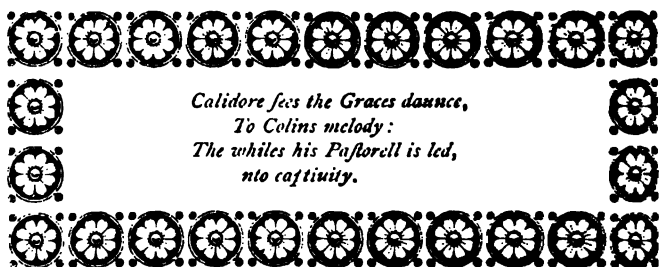
But *Calidore* he greatly did mistake ;
For he was strong and mightily stiffe pight,
That with one fall his necke he almost brake.
And had he not vpon him fallen light,
His dearest ioynt he sure had broken quight.
Then was the oaken crowne by *Pastorell*
Giuen to *Calidore*, as his due right ; 400
But he, that did in courtesie excell,
Gaued it to *Coridon*, and said he wonne it well.

Thus did the gentle knight himselfe abear
Amongst that rusticke rout in all his deeds,
That euen they, the which his riuals were,
Could not maligne him, but commend him needs :
For / courtesie amongst the rudest breeds
Good will and fauour. So it surely wrought
With this faire Mayd, and in her mynde the seeds
Of perfect loue did sow, that last forth brought 410
The fruite of ioy and blisse, though long time dearly
bought.

l. 407, : after 'breeds' removed : l. 411, 'fought,' suggested by Church.
VIII. 15

Thus *Calidore* continu'd there long time,
 To winne the loue of the faire *Pastorell* ;
 Which hauing got, he vsed without crime
 Or blamefull blot, but menaged so well,
 That he of all the rest, which there did [d]well,
 Was fauoured, and to her grace commended.
 But what straunge fortunes vnto him befell,
 Ere he attain'd the point by him intended,
 Shall more conueniently in other place be ended.

Cant. X.



VV Ho now does follow the foule *Blatant Beast*,
 Whilest *Calidore* does follow that faire
 Mayd,
 Vnmyndfull of his vow and high behest,
 Which by the Faery Queene was on him layd,
 That he should neuer leaue, nor be delayd 10
 From chacing him, till he had it attchieued ?
 But now entrapt of loue, which him betrayd,

l. 416, 'well' in '96 and 1609—text an obvious correction, as in 1611.

He mindeth more, how he may be relieued
With grace from her, whose loue his heart hath fore en-
griued. /

That from henceforth he meanes no more to few
His former quest, so full of toile and paine ;
Another quest, another game in vew
He hath, the guerdon of his loue to gaine :
With whom he myndes for euer to remaine,
And fet his rest amongst the rusticke sort, 20
Rather then hunt still after shadowes vaine
Of courtly fauour, fed with light report,
Of euery blaste, and sayling alwaies in the port.

Ne certes mote he greatly blamed be,
From so high step to stoupe vnto so low.
For who had tasted once (as oft did he)
The happy peace, which there doth ouerflow,
And prou'd the perfect pleasures, which doe grow
Amongst poore hyndes, in hils, in woods, in dales,
Would neuer more delight in painted show 30
Of such false blisse, as there is set for stales,
T'entrap vnwary fooles in their eternall bales.

For what hath all that goodly glorious gaze
Like to one sight, which *Calidore* did vew ?
The glaunce whereof their dimmed eies would daze,
That neuer more they should endure the shew
Of that sunne-shine, that makes them looke askew.
Ne ought in all that world of beauties rare,
(Saue onely *Glorianaes* heauenly hew

To which what can compare ?) can it compare ; 40
 The which as commeth now, by course I will declare.

One day as he did raunge the fields abroad,
 Whilest his faire *Pastorella* was elsewhere,
 He chaunst to come, far from all peoples troad,
 Vnto a place, whose pleasaunce did appere
 To / passe all others, on the earth which were :
 For all that euer was by natures skill
 Deuized to worke delight, was gathered there,
 And there by her were poured forth at fill,
 As if this to adorne, she all the rest did pill. 50

It was an hill, plaste in an open plaine,
 That round about was bordered with a wood
 Of matchlesse hight, that seem'd th'earth to disdaine ;
 In which all trees of honour stately stood,
 And did all winter as in sommer bud,
 Spredding paulions for the birds to bowre,
 Which in their lower braunches fung aloud ;
 And in their tops the foring hauke did towre,
 Sitting like King of fowles in maiesty and powre.

And at the foote thereof, a gentle flud 60
 His siluer waues did softly tumble downe,
 Vnmard with ragged mosse or filthy mud ;
 Ne mote wylde beastes, ne mote the ruder clowne
 Thereto approach, ne filth mote therein drowne :
 But Nymphes and Faeries by the bancks did sit,
 In the woods shade, which did the waters crowne,

l. 49, '*fill*' = *full* ? but qu. '*will*' ? : l. 51, , after '*hill*'—accepted: l. 53,
 ; for ,—accepted, and so l. 62.

Keeping all noyfome things away from it,
And to the waters fall tuning their accents fit.

✓ And on the top thereof a spacious plaine
Did spred it felfe, to serue to all delight, 70
Either to daunce, when they to daunce would faine,
Or else to course about their bases light ;
Ne ought there wanted, which for pleasure might
Defired be, or thence to banish bale :
So pleasauntly the hill with equall hight,
Did seeme to ouerlooke the lowly vale ;
Therefore it rightly cleeped was mount *Acidale*. /

They say that *Venus*, when she did dispose
9 Her felfe to pleasaunce, vsed to resort
Vnto this place, and therein to repose 80
And rest her felfe, as in a gladfome port,
Or with the Graces there to play and sport ;
That euen her owne Cytheron, though in it
She vsed most to keepe her royall court,
And in her foueraine Maiefty to fit,
She in regard hereof refusde and thought vnfit.

✓ Vnto this place when as the Elfin Knight
Approcht, him seemed that the merry sound
✓ Of a shrill pipe he playing heard on hight,
And many feete fast thumping th'hollow ground, 90
That through the woods their Eccho did rebound.
He nigher drew, to weete what mote it be ;
There he a troupe of Ladies dauncing found
Full merrily, and making gladfull glee,
And in the midst a Shepheard piping he did see.

He durst not enter into th'open greene,
 For dread of them vnwares to be descryde,
 For breaking of their daunce, if he were seene ;
 But in the couert of the wood did byde,
 Beholding all, yet of them vnspyde. 100
 There he did see, that pleased much his sight,
 That euen he him selfe his eyes enuyde,
 An hundred naked maidens lilly white,
 All raunged in a ring, and dauncing in delight.

All they without were raunged in a ring,
 And daunced round ; but in the midst of them
 Threc other Ladies did both daunce and sing,
 The whilest the rest them round about did hemme,
 And / like a girlond did in compasse stemme :
 And in the middest of those fame three, was placed
 Another Damzell, as a precious gemme, 111
 Amidst a ring most richly well enchaced,
 That with her goodly prefence all the rest much graded.

Looke how the Crowne, which *Ariadne* wore
 Vpon her yuory forehead that same day
 That *Theseus* her vnto his bridale bore,
 When the bold *Centaures* made that bloudy fray
 With the fierce *Lapithes*, which did them dismay ;
 Being now placed in the firmament,
 Through the bright heauen doth her beams display,
 And is vnto the starres an ornament, 121
 Which round about her moue in order excellent.

Such was the beauty of this goodly band,
 Whose fundry parts were here too long to tell :

L 115, , after 'day' removed, as in 1609: ll 117-18 within ().

But she that in the midst of them did stand,
Seem'd all the rest in beauty to excell,
Crownd with a rosie girlond, that right well
Did her befeeme. And euer, as the crew
About her daunſt, sweet flowres, that far did smell,
And fragrant odours they vppon her threw; 130
But most of all, those three did her with gifts endew.

Those were the Graces, daughters of delight,
Handmaides of *Venus*, which are wont to haunt
Vppon this hill, and daunce there day and night :
Those three to men all gifts of grace do graunt,
And all, that *Venus* in her selfe doth vaunt,
Is borrowed of them. But that faire one,
That in the midst was placed parauaunt,
Was she to whom that shepheard pypt alone,
That made him pipe so merrily, as neuer none. / 140

She was to weete that iolly Shepheards lasse,
Which piped there vnto that merry rout :
That iolly shepheard, which there piped, was
Poore *Colin Clout* (who knowes not *Colin Clout*?)
He pypt apace, whilest they him daunſt about.
Pype iolly shepheard, pype thou now apace
Vnto thy loue, that made thee low to lout ;
Thy Loue is present there with thee in place,
Thy Loue is there aduaunſt to be another Grace.

Much wondred *Calidore* at this straunge sight, 150
Whose like before his eye had neuer seene,

And standing long astonish'd in spright,
 And rapt with pleasure, wist not what to weene;
 Whether it were the traine of beauties Queene,
 Or Nymphes, or Faeries, or enchanted show,
 With which his eyes mote haue deluded beene.
 Therefore resolving, what it was, to know,
 Out of the wood he rose, and toward them did go.

But soone as he appeared to their vew,
 They vanished all away out of his sight, 160
 And cleane were gone, which way he neuer knew;
 All saue the shepherd, who for fell despight
 Of that displeasure, broke his bag-pipe quight,
 And made great mone for that unhappy turne.
 But *Calidore*, though no lesse sory wight,
 For that mishap, yet seeing him to mourne,
 Drew neare, that he the truth of all by him mote learne.

And first him greeting, thus vnto him spake;
 Haile iolly shepherd, which thy ioyous dayes
 Here leadeft in this goodly merry make, 170
 Frequented of these gentle Nymphes alwayes,
 Which / to thee flocke, to heare thy louely layes;
 Tell me, what mote these dainty Damzels be,
 Which here with thee doe make their pleasant playes?
 Right happy thou, that mayst them freely see:
 But why when I them saw, fled they away from me?

Not I so happy answerd then that swaine,
 As thou unhappy, which them thence didst chace,

l. 168, ; for ,—accepted : l. 170, 'merry-make.'

Whom by no meanes thou canst recall againe ;
 For being gone, none can them bring in place, 180
 But whom they of themselues list so to grace.
 Right fory I, (saide then Sir *Calidore*,)
 That my ill fortune did them hence displace.
 But since things passed none may now restore, (fore.
 Tell me, what were they all, whose lacke thee grieues fo

Tho gan that shepheard thus for to dilate ;
 Then wote thou shepheard, whatsoeuer thou bee,
 That all those Ladies, which thou sawest late,
 Are *Venus* Damzels, all within her fee,
 But differing in honour and degree : 190
 They all are Graces, which on her depend,
 Besides a thousand more, which ready bee
 Her to adorne, when so she forth doth wend :
 But those three in the midst, doe chiefe on her attend.

They are the daughters of sky-ruling *Ioue*,
 By him begot of faire *Eurynome*,
 The Oceans daughter, in this pleasant groue,
 As he this way comming from feastfull glee,
 Of *Thetis* wedding with *AEacidee*.
 In sommers shade himselfe here rested weary. 200
 The first of them hight mylde *Euphrosyne*,
 Next faire *Aglaia*, last *Thalia* merry :
 Sweete Goddessees all three which me in mirth do cherry./

These three on men all gracious gifts bestow,
 Which decke the body or adorne the mynde,

l. 179. ; for , —not (.) as in 1609 : l. 199, '*AEacidee*' for '*AEicidee*' of 96—accepted.

To make them louely or well fauoured show,
 As comely carriage, entertainment kynde,
 Sweete semblaunt, friendly offices that bynde,
 And all the complements of curtesie :
 They teach vs, how to each degree and kynde 210
 We should our selues demeane, to low, to hie ;
 To friends, to focs, which skill men call Ciuility.

Therefore they alwaies smoothly seeme to smile,
 That we likewise should mylde and gentle be,
 And also naked are, that without guile
 Or false dissemblaunce all them plaine may see,
 Simple and true from couert malice free :
 And eeke them selues so in their daunce they bore,
 That two of them still forward seemd to bee,
 But one still towards shew'd her selfe afore ; 220
 That good should from vs goe, then come in greater
 store.

Such were those Goddeses, which ye did see ;
 But that fourth Mayd, which there amidst the traced,
 Who can aread, what creature mote she bee,
 Whether a creature, or a goddesse graced
 With heauenly gifts from heuen first enrac'd ?
 But what so sure she was, she worthy was,
 To be the fourth with those three other placed :
 Yet was she certes but a countrey lasse,
 Yet she all other countrey lasses farre did passe. 230

So farre as doth the daughter of the day,
 All other lesser lights in light excell,

So farre doth she in beautyfull array,
Above all other lasses beare the bell :
Ne / lesse in vertue that bescemes her well,
Doth she exceede the rest of all her race ;
For which the Graces that here wont to dwell,
Haue for more honor brought her to this place,
And graced her so much to be another Grace.

Another Grace she well deserues to be, 240
In whom so many Graces gathered are,
Excelling much the meane of her degree ;
Diuine resemblance, beauty soueraine rare,
Firme Chastity, that spight ne blemish dare ;
All which she with such courtesie doth grace,
That all her peres cannot with her compare,
But quite are dimmed, when she is in place.
She made me often pipe and now to pipe apace.

Sunne of the world, great glory of the sky,
That all the earth doest lighten with thy rayes, 250
Great *Gloriana*, greatest Maiesty,
Pardon thy shepheard, mongst so many layes,
As he hath sung of thee in all his dayes,
To make one minime of thy poore handmayd,
And vnderneath thy feete to place her prayse ;
That when thy glory shall be farre displayd
To future age of her this mention may be made.

When thus that shepheard ended had his speech,
Sayd *Calidore* ; Now sure it yrketh mee,
That to thy blisse I made this luckelesse breach, 260
As now the author of thy bale to be,

l. 234, : for, —accepted : l. 236, ; for, —accepted, and so l. 255.

Thus to bereaue thy Loues deare fight from thee :
 But gentle Shepheard pardon thou my shame,
 Who rashly sought that, which I mote not see.
 Thus did the courteous Knight excuse his blame,
 And to recomfort him, all comely meanes did frame. /

In such discourfes they together spent
 Long time, as fit occafion forth them led ;
 With which the Knight him felfe did much content,
 And with delight his greedy fancy fed, 270
 Both of his words, which he with reafon red ;
 And alfo of the place, whose pleasures rare
 With fuch regard his fences rauifhed,
 That thence, he had no will away to fare,
 But wifht, that with that shepheard he mote dwelling
 fhare.

But that enuenid ftting, the which of yore,
 His poyfnous point deepe fixed in his hart
 Had left, now gan afrefh to rancle fore,
 And to renue the rigour of his fmart :
 Which to recure, no skill of Leaches art 280
 Mote him auaille, but to returne againe
 To his wounds worker, that with louely dart
 Dinting his breft, had bred his reftleffe paine,
 Like as the wounded Whale to fhore flies frō the maine.

So taking leaue of that fame gentle fwaine,
 He backe returned to his ruficke wonne,
 Where his faire *Pafstorella* did remaine :
 To whome in fort, as he at firft begonne,

He daily did apply him felfe to donne
 All dewfull seruice, voide of thoughts impure : 290
 Ne any paines ne perill did he shonne,
 By which he might her to his loue allure,
 And liking in her yet vntamed heart procure.

And euermore the shepheard *Coridon*,
 What euer thing he did her to aggrate,
 Did striue to match with strong contention,
 And all his paines did closely emulate ;
 Whether / it were to caroll, as they fate
 Keeping their sheepe, or games to exercize,
 Or to present her with their labours late ; 300
 Through which if any grace chaunft to arize
 To him, the Shepheard streight with ieaousie did frize.

One day as they all three together went
 To the greene wood, to gather strawberries,
 There chaunft to them a daungerous accident ;
 A Tigre forth out of the wood did rise,
 That with fell clawes full of fierce gourmandize,
 And greedy mouth, wide gaping like hell gate,
 Did runne at *Pastorell*, her to surprize :
 Whom she beholding, now all desolate 310
 Gan cry to them aloud, to helpe ere all too late.

Which *Coridon* first hearing, ran in haist
 To reskue her, but when he saw the feend,
 Through cowherd feare he fled away as fast,
 Ne durst abide the daunger of the end ;

l. 289, , removed after 'donne' as in 1609 and placed after 'se, uice':
 l. 290, 'impure'—correction of '96 misprint 'impare': l. 309, , after
 'Pastorell'—accepted: l. 311, 'her'—Collier suggests 'ere'—accepted:
 l. 314, 'coward,' as before.

His life he steemed dearer then his frend.
 But *Calidore* soone comming to her ayde,
 When he the beast saw ready now to rend
 His Loues deare spoile, in which his heart was prayde,
 He ran at him enraged in stead of being frayde. 320

He had no weapon, but his shepherds hooke,
 To serue the vengeance of his wrathfull will ;
 With which so sternely he the monster strooke,
 That to the ground astonished he fell ;
 Whence ere he could recou'r, he did him quell,
 And hewing off his head, [he] it presented
 Before the feete of the faire *Pastorell* ;
 Who scarcely yet from former feare exempted,
 A thousand times him thank't, that had her death pre-
 uented. /

From that day forth she gan him to affect, 330
 And daily more her fauour did augment ;
 But *Coridon* for cowerdize reiect,
 Fit to keepe sheepe, vnfit for loues content :
 The gentle heart scornes base disparagement.
 Yet *Calidore* did not despize him quight,
 But vsde him friendly for further intent,
 That by his fellowship, he colour might
 Both his estate, and loue, from skill of any wight.

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought her,
 With humble seruice, and with daily sute, 340

l. 319, capital L—accepted : l. 320, '*enrag'd*' : l. 322, ; for ,—accepted :
 l. 326, '*he*' filled in as a clear inadvertent omission : l. 332, '*cowardize*' :
 l. 338, , after '*loue*'—accepted.

That at the laft vnto his will he brought her ; •
Which he fo wifely well did profecute,
That of his loue he reapt the timely frute,
And ioyed long in clofe felicity :
Till fortune fraught with malice, blinde, and brute,
That enuies louers long prosperity,
Blew vp a bitter ftorme of foule aduerfity.

It fortun'd one day, when *Calidore*
Was hunting in the woods (as was his trade)
A lawleffe people, *Brigants* hight of yore, 350
That neuer vfde to liue by plough nor fpade,
But fed on fpoile and booty, which they made
Vpon their neighbours, which did nigh them border,
The dwelling of thefe fhepheards did inuade,
And fpoild their houfes, and them felues did murder;
And droue away their flocks, with other much diforder.

Amongft the reft, the which they then did pray,
They fpoild old *Melibee* of all he had,
And all his people captiue led away ;
Mongft which this luckleffe mayd away was lad, 360
Faure / *Pafstorella*, forrowfull and fad,
Moft forrowfull, moft fad, that euer fight,
Now made the fpoile of theeues and *Brigants* bad,
Which was the conqueft of the gentleft Knight,
That euer liu'd, and th'onely glory of his might.

With them alfo was taken *Coridon*,
And carried captiue by thofe theeues away ;

Who in the couert of the night, that none
 Mote them descry, nor reskue from their pray,
 Vnto their dwelling did them close conuay. 370
 Their dwelling in a little Island was,
 Couered with shrubby woods, in which no way
 Appeard for people in nor out to pas,
 Nor any footing fynde for ouergrownen gras.

For vnderneath the ground their way was made,
 Through hollow caues, that no man mote discouer
 For the thicke shrubs, which did them alwaies shade
 From view of liuing wight, and couered ouer :
 But darknesse dred and daily night did houer
 Through all the inner parts, wherein they dwelt. 380
 Ne lightned was with window, nor with louer,
 But with continuall candlelight, which delt
 A doubtfull sence of things, not so well seene, as felt

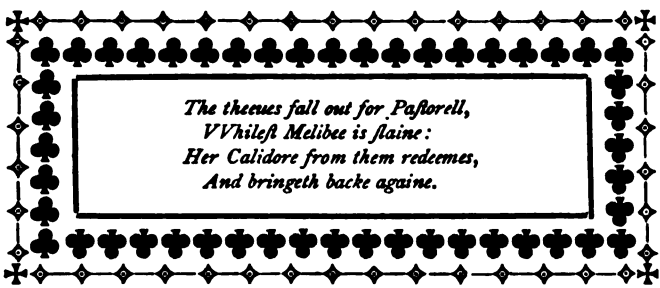
Hither those *Brigants* brought their present pray,
 And kept them with continuall watch and ward ;
 Meaning so soone, as they conuenient may,
 For slaues to sell them, for no small reward,
 To merchants, which them kept in bondage hard,
 Or sold againe. Now when faire *Pastorell*
 Into this place was brought, and kept with gard 390
 Of griesly theeues, she thought her self in hell,
 Where with such damned fiends she should in darknesse
 dwell. /

But for to tell the dolefull dreriment,
 And pittifull complaints, which there she made,

l. 379, 'drad' : *ib.*, 'deadly' is suggested by Church : l. 385, ; for, — accepted.

Where day and night she nought did but lament
 Her wretched life, shut vp in deadly shade,
 And waste her goodly beauty, which did fade
 Like to a flowre, that feeles no heate of funne,
 Which may her feeble leaues with comfort glade.
 But what befell her in that theeuish wonne, 400
 Will in an other Canto better be begonne.

Cant. / XI.



*The thecues fall out for Pastorell,
 VVhilest Melibee is slaine:
 Her Calidore from them redeemes,
 And bringeth backe againe.*

THe ioyes of loue, if they should euer last,
 Without affliction or disquietnesse,
 That worldly chaunces doe amongst them cast,
 Would be on earth too great a blessednesse,
 Likier to heauen, then mortall wretchednesse. 10
 Therefore the winged God, to let men weet,
 That here on earth is no fure happinesse,
 A thousand sowres hath tempred with one sweet,
 To make it seeme more deare and dainty, as is meet.

ll. 395-9 within () : l. 400, 'And.'

Like as is now befallne to this faire Mayd,
 Faire *Pastorell*, of whom is now my song :
 Who being now in dreadfull darknesse layd,
 Amongst those theeues, which her in bondage strong /
 Detaynd ; yet Fortune not with all this wrong
 Contented, greater mischiefe on her threw, 20
 And sorrowes heapt on her in greater throng ;
 That who so heares her heauinesse, would rew
 And pittie her sad plight, so chang'd from pleasaunt
 hew.

Whylest thus she in these hellish dens remayned,
 Wrapped in wretched cares and hearts vnrest,
 It so befell (as Fortune had ordayned)
 That he, which was their Capitaine profest,
 And had the chiefe commaund of all the rest,
 One day as he did all his prisoners vew,
 With lustfull eyes, beheld that louely guesst, 30
 Faire *Pastorella* ; whose sad mournefull hew
 Like the faire Morning clad in misty fog did shew.

At sight whereof his barbarous heart was fired,
 And inly burnt with flames most raging whot,
 That her alone he for his part desired
 Of all the other pray, which they had got,
 And her in mynde did to him selfe allot.
 From that day forth he kyndnesse to her showed,
 And fought her loue, by all the meanes he mote ;
 With looks, with words, with gifts he oft her wowed :
 And mixed threats among, and much vnto her vowed.

l. 16, : for ,—accepted : l. 19, ; for ,—accepted ; and so l. 31 : l. 34,
 'hot' : l. 36, 'prey.'

But all that euer he could doe or say, 42
 Her constant mynd could not a whit remoue,
 Nor draw vnto the lure of his lewd lay,
 To graunt him fauour, or afford him loue.
 Yet ceaft he not to few and all waies proue,
 By which he mote accomplifh his request,
 Saying and doing all that mote behoue ;
 Ne day nor night he fuffred her to reft,
 But her all night did watch, and all the day moleft. / 50

At laft, when him ſhe ſo importune ſaw,
 Fearing leaft he at length the raines would lend
 Vnto his luſt, and make his will his law,
 Sith in his powre ſhe was to foe or frend ;
 She thought it beſt, for ſhadow to pretend
 Some ſhew of fauour, by him gracing ſmall,
 That ſhe thereby mote either freely wend,
 Or at more eaſe continue there his thrall :
 A little well is lent, that gaineth more withall.

So from thenceforth, when loue he to her made, 60
 With better tearmes ſhe did him entertaine ;
 Which gaue him hope, and did him halfe perfwade,
 That he in time her ioyaunce ſhould obtaine.
 But when ſhe ſaw, through that ſmall fauours gaine,
 That further, then ſhe willing was, he preſt ;
 She found no meanes to barre him, but to faine
 A fodaine ſickeneſſe, which her ſore oppreſt,
 And made vnfit to ſerue his lawleſſe mindes beſeſt.

By meanes whereof ſhe would not him permit
 Once to approch to her in priuity, 70

l. 51, , after '*laſt*'—accepted : and ll. 54, 61, 65, ; for , .

But onely mongst the rest by her to fit,
 Mourning the rigour of her malady,
 And seeking all things meete for remedy.
 But she resolu'd no remedy to fynde,
 Nor better cheare to shew in misery,
 Till Fortune would her captiue bonds vnbynde:
 Her sicknesse was not of the body but the mynde.

During which space that she thus sicke did lie,
 It chaunst a sort of merchants, which were wount
 To skim those coastes, for bondmen there to buy, 80
 And by such trafficke after gaines to hunt,
 Arriued / in this Isle though bare and blunt,
 T'inquire for slaues ; where being readie met
 By some of these same theeues at the instant brunt,
 Were brought vnto their Captaine, who was set
 By his faire patients fide with sorrowfull regret.

To whom they shewed, how those marchants were
 Arriu'd in place, their bondslaues for to buy ;
 And therefore prayd, that those same captiues there
 Mote to them for their most commodity 90
 Be sold, and mongst them shared equally.
 This their request the Captaine much appalled ;
 Yet could he not their iust demaund deny,
 And willed streight the slaues should forth be called,
 And sold for most aduantage not to be forstalled.

Then forth the good old *Melibæ* was brought,
 And *Coridon*, with many other moe,

l. 76, : for, not . of 1609 : l. 82, (*though . . . blunt*) : l. 88, ; for, —
 accepted.

Whom they before in diuerſe ſpoyles had caught :
All which he to the marchants ſale did ſhowe.
Till ſome, which did the ſundry priſoners knowe, 100
Gan to inquire for that faire ſhepherdeſſe,
Which with the reſt they tooke not long agoe,
And gan her forme and feature to expreſſe,
The more t'augment her price, through praife of com-
lineſſe.

To whom the Captaine in full angry wiſe
Made anſwere, that the Mayd of whom they ſpake,
Was his owne purchaſe and his onely prize,
With which none had to doe, ne ought partake,
But he himſelfe, which did that conqueſt make ;
Little for him to haue one filly laſſe : 110
Beſides, through ſickneſſe now ſo wan and weake,
That nothing meet in marchandiſe to paſſe. (was. /
So ſhew'd them her, to proue how pale & weake ſhe

The ſight of whom, though now decayd and mard,
And eke but hardly ſeene by candle-light :
Yet like a Diamond of rich regard,
In doubtfull ſhadow of the darkeſome night,
With ſtarrie beames about her ſhining bright,
Theſe marchants fixed eyes did ſo amaze,
That what through wonder, & what through delight,
A while on her they greedily did gaze, 121
And did her greatly like, and did her greatly praize.

At laſt when all the reſt them offred were,
And priſes to them placed at their pleaſure,

L. 111, , after 'Beſides': L. 115, : for ,—accepted.

They all refused in regard of her,
 Ne ought would buy, how euer prifd with meafure,
 Withouten her, whose worth aboue all threafure
 They did esteeme, and offred store of gold.
 But then the Captaine fraught with more difpleafure,
 Bad them be ftill, his loue fhould not be fold : 130
 The reft take if they would, he her to him would hold.

Therewith fome other of the chiefeft theeues
 Boldly him bad fuch iniurie forbear ;
 For that fame mayd, how euer it him greeues,
 Should with the reft be fold before him theare,
 To make the prizes of the reft more deare.
 That with great rage he ftoutly doth denay ;
 And fiercely drawing forth his blade, doth fweare,
 That who fo hardie hand on her doth lay,
 It dearly fhall aby, and death for handfell pay. 140

Thus as they words amongft them multiply,
 They fall to ftrokes, the frute of too much talke :
 And the mad Steele about doth fiercely fly,
 Not fparing wight, ne leauing any balke,
 But / making way for death at large to walke :
 Who in the horror of the grieftly night,
 In thoufand dreadful fhapes doth mongft them ftalke,
 And makes huge hauocke, whiles the candlelight
 Out quenched, leaues no fhall nor difference of wight.

Like as a fort of hungry dogs ymet 150
 About fome carcafe by the common way,
 Doe fall together, ftryuing each to get
 The greateft portion of the greedie pray ;

l. 136, '*prices*' : l. 142, : for, — accepted : l. 153, '*prey*' as before.

All on confused heapes themselues assay,
And snatch, and byte, and rend, and tug, and teare ;
That who them sees, would wonder at their fray,
And who sees not, would be affrayd to heare :
Such was the conflict of those cruell *Brigants* there.

But first of all, their captiues they doe kill,
Least they should ioyne against the weaker side, 160
Or rise against the remnant at their will ;
Old *Melibæ* is slaine, and him beside
His aged wife, with many others wide :
But *Coridon* escaping craftily,
Creepes forth of dores, whilst darknes him doth hide,
And flies away as fast as he can hye,
Ne stayeth leaue to take, before his friends doe dye.

But *Pastorella*, wofull wretched Elfe,
Was by the Captaine all this while defended :
Who minding more her safety then himselfe, 170
His target alwayes ouer her pretended ;
By meanes whereof, that mote not be amended,
He at the length was slaine, and layd on ground,
Yet holding fast twixt both his armes extended
Fayre *Pastorell*, who with the selfe same wound
Launcht through the arme, fell down with him in drierie
fswound. /

There lay she couered with confused preasse
Of carcases, which dying on her fell.
Tho when as he was dead, the fray gan ceaße,
And each to other calling, did compell 180

l. 157, : for (.) : l. 163, : for ,—accepted, and l. 169 : l. 171, '*protended*'
is suggested by Collier (needlessly). See Glossary, s.v. : l. 176, '*Lanc't.*'

To stay their cruell hands from slaughter fell.
 Sith they that were the cause of all, were gone.
 Thereto they all attonce agreed well,
 And lighting candles new, gan searce anone,
 How many of their friends were slaine, how many fone.

Their Captaine there they cruelly found kild,
 And in his armes the dreary dying mayd,
 Like a sweet Angell twixt two clouds vphild :
 Her louely light was dimmed and decayd,
 With cloud of death vpon her eyes displayd ; 190
 Yet did the cloud make euen that dimmed light
 Seeme much more louely in that darknesse layd,
 And twixt the twinckling of her eye-lids bright,
 To sparke out litle beames, like starres in foggie night.

But when they mou'd the carcases aside,
 They found that life did yet in her remaine :
 Then all their helps they bufily applyde,
 To call the foule backe to her home againe ;
 And wrought so well with labour and long paine,
 That they to life recouered her at last. 200
 Who fighting fore, as if her hart in twaine
 Had riuen bene, and all her hart strings braft,
 With drearie drouping eyne lookt vp like one aghaft.

There she beheld, that fore her grieu'd to see,
 Her father and her friends about her lying,
 Her selfe sole left, a second spoyle to bee
 Of those, that hauing saued her from dying,
 Renew'd / her death by timely death denying :
 What now is left her, but to wayle and weepe,
 Wringing her hands, and ruefully loud crying ? 210

Ne cared she her wound in teares to steepe,
Albe with all their might those *Brigants* her did keepe.

But when they saw her now reliu'd againe,
They left her so, in charge of one the best
Of many worst, who with vnkind disdaine
And cruell rigour her did much molest ;
Scarfe yeelding her due food, or timely rest,
And scarcely suffering her infestred wound,
That fore her payn'd, by any to be drest,
So leaue we her in wretched thraldome bound, 220
And turne we backe to *Calidore*, where we him found.

Who when he backe returned from the wood,
And saw his shepheards cottage spoyled quight,
And his Loue rest away, he wexed wood,
And halfe enraged at that ruefull sight ;
That euen his hart for very fell despight,
And his owne flesh he readie was to teare :
He chaust, he grieu'd, he fretted, and he fight,
And fared like a furious wyld Beare,
Whose whelpes are stolne away, she being otherwhere.

Ne wight he found, to whom he might complaine, 231
Ne wight he found, of whom he might inquire ;
That more increast the anguish of his paine.
He fought the woods ; but no man could see there,
He fought the plaines ; but could no tydings heare.
The woods did nought but ecchoes vaine rebound ;
The playnes all waste and emptie did appeare :

l. 213, '*reliu'd*': l. 224, capital L—accepted: l. 225, ; for , and l. 227,
: for ,—accepted: l. 228, '*sight*' as before.

Where wont the shepheards oft their pypes refound,
And feed an hundred flocks, there now not one he found./

At last as there he romed vp and downe, 240
He chaunst one comming towards him to spy,
That seem'd to be some sorie simple clowne,
With ragged weedes, and lockes vpstaring hye,
As if he did from some late daunger fly,
And yet his feare did follow him behynd :
Who as he vnto him approached nye,
He mote perceiue by signes, which he did fynd,
That *Coridon* it was, the silly shepherds hynd.

Tho to him running fast, he did not stay
To greet him first, but askt where were the rest ; 250
Where *Pastorell*? who full of fresh difmay,
And gushing forth in teares, was so opprest,
That he no word could speake, but smit his brest,
And vp to heauen his eyes still streeming threw.
Whereat the knight amaz'd, yet did not rest,
But askt againe what ment that rufull hew :
Where was his *Pastorell*? where all the other crew?

Ah well away (fayd he then fighting fore)
That euer I did liue, this day to see,
This difmall day, and was not dead before, 260
Before I saw faire *Pastorella* dye.
Dic? out alas then *Calidore* did cry :
How could the death dare euer her to quell?
But read thou shepheard, read what destiny,
Or other dyrefull hap from heauen or hell (tell.
Hath wrought this wicked deed : doe feare away, and

Tho when the shepheard breathed had awhile,
He thus began : where shall I then commence
This wofull tale ? or how those *Brigants* vyle, 270
With cruell rage and dreadfull violence
Spoyle / all our cots, and caried vs from hence ?
Or how faire *Pastorell* should haue bene sold
To marchants, but was sau'd with strong defence ?
Or how those theeues, whilest one fought her to hold,
Fell all at ods, and fought through fury fierce and bold.

In that same conflict (woe is me) befell
This fatall chaunce, this dolefull accident,
Whose heauy tydings now I haue to tell.
First all the captiues, which they here had hent,
Were by them slaine by generall consent ; 280
Old *Melibæ* and his good wife withall
These eyes saw die, and dearely did lament :
But when the lot to *Pastorell* did fall,
Their Captaine long withstood, & did her death forfall.

But what could he gainst all them doe alone ?
It could not boot ; needs mote she die at last :
I onely scapt through great confusione
Of cryes and clamors, which amongst them past,
In dreadfull darknesse dreadfully aghast ;
That better were with them to haue bene dead, 290
Then here to see all desolate and wast,
Despoyle of those ioyes and iollyhead,
Which with those gentle shepherds here I wont to lead.

When *Calidore* these ruefull newes had raught,
His hart quite deaded was with anguish great,

l. 285, ? for :—accepted : l. 292, 'iolly head'—made one word.

And all his wits with doole were nigh diftraught,
 That he his face, his head, his brest did beat,
 And death it selfe vnto himselfe did threat ;
 Oft curfing th'heauens, that so cruell were
 To her, whose name he often did repeat ; 300
 And wishing oft, that he were present there,
 When she was slaine, or had bene to her succour nere. /

But after grieve awhile had had his course,
 And spent it selfe in mourning, he at last
 Began to mitigate his swelling fourse,
 And in his mind with better reason cast,
 How he might saue her life, if life did last ;
 Or if that dead, how he her death might wreake,
 Sith otherwise he could not mend thing past ;
 Or if it to reuenge he were too weake, 310
 Then for to die with her, and his liues threed to breake.

Tho *Coridon* he prayd, sith he well knew
 The readie way vnto that theeuish wonne,
 To wend with him, and be his conduct trew
 Vnto the place, to see what should be donne.
 But he, whose hart through feare was late fordonne,
 Would not for ought be drawne to former drede,
 But by all meanes the daunger knowne did shonne :
 Yet *Calidore* so well him wrought with meed,
 And faire bespoke with words, that he at last agreed.

So forth they goe together (God before) 321
 Both clad in shepheards weeds agreeably,
 And both with shepheards hookes : But *Calidore*
 Had vnderneath, him armed priuily.
 Tho to the place when they approached nye,

They chaunft, vpon an hill not farre away,
Some flockes of sheepe and shepheards to espy ;
To whom they both agreed to take their way,
In hope there newes to learne, how they mote best assay.

There did they find, that which they did not feare, 330
The selfe same flockes, the which those theeues had rest
From *Melibæ* and from themself[u]es whyleare,
And certaine of the theeues there by them left,
The / which for want of heards themfelues then kept.
Right well knew *Coridon* his owne late sheepe,
And seeing them, for tender pittie wept :
But when he saw the theeues, which did them keepe,
His hart gan sayle, albe he saw them all asleepe.

But *Calidore* recomforting his grieve,
Though not his feare : for nought may feare diffwade ;
Him hardly forward drew, whereas the thiefe 341
Lay sleeping foundly in the bushes shade,
Whom *Coridon* him counfeld to inuade
Now all vnwares, and take the spoyle away ;
But he, that in his mind had closely made
A further purpose, would not so them slay,
But gently waking them, gaue them the time of day.

Tho sitting downe by them vpon the greene,
Of fundrie things he purpose gan to saine ;
That he by them might certaine tydings weene 350
Of *Pastorell*, were she aliue or slaine.
Mongst which the theeues them questioned againe,
What misfer men, and eke from whence they were.
To whom they answer'd, as did appertaine,

That they were poore heardgroomes, the which whylere
Had frō their maisters fled, & now fought hyre elfwhere.

Whereof right glad they seem'd, and offer made
To hyre them well, if they their flockes would keepe:
For they themfelues were euill groomes, they sayd,
Vnwont with heards to watch, or pasture sheepe,
But to forray the land, or scoure the deepe. 361
Thereto they soone agreed and earnest tooke,
To keepe their flockes for litle hyre and chepe :
For they for better hyre did shortly looke,
So there all day they bode, till light the sky forfooke. /

Tho when as towards darksome night it drew,
Vnto their hellish dens those theeues them brought ;
Where shortly they in great acquaintance grew,
And all the secrets of their entayles fought.
There did they find, contrarie to their thought, 370
That *Pastorell* yet liu'd, but all the rest
Were dead, right so as *Coridon* had taught :
Whereof they both full glad and blyth did rest,
But chiefly *Calidore*, whom grieve had most possest.

At length when they occasion fittest found,
In dead of night when all the theeues did rest
After a late forray, and slept full found,
Sir *Calidore* him arm'd, as he thought best,
Hauing of late by diligent inquest,
Prouided him a sword of meanest fort : 380
With which he streight went to the Captaines nest.

l. 367, ; for,—accepted : l. 370, (*contrary . . . fought*) : l. 379, (*by . . . inquest*).

But *Coridon* durst not with him confort,
Ne durst abide behind, for dread of worse effort.

When to the Caue they came, they found it fast :
But *Calidore* with huge refistlesse might,
The dores assayled, and the locks vpbraft.
With noyse whereof the theefe awaking light,
Vnto the entrance ran : where the bold knight
Encountring him with small resistance slew ;
The whiles faire *Pastorell* through great affright 390
Was almost dead, misdoubting least of new
Some vprore were like that, which lately she did vew.

But when as *Calidore* was comen in,
And gan aloud for *Pastorell* to call ;
Knowing his voice although not heard long fin,
She sudden was reuiued therewithall,
And / wondrous joy felt in her spirits thrall :
Like him that being long in tempest toft,
Looking each houre into deathes mouth to fall,
At length espyes at hand the happie coft, 400
On which he safety hopes, that earst feard to be loft.

Her gentle hart, that now long season past
Had neuer ioyance felt, nor chearefull thought,
Began some smacke of comfort new to tast,
Like lyfull heat to nummed senses brought,
And life to feele, that long for death had fought ;
Ne lesse in hart reioyced *Calidore*
When he her found, but like to one distraught,

l. 394, ; for ,— accepted : l. 395, (*although . . . sin*) : l. 405, 'lifefull.'

And robd of reason, towards her him bore,
A thousand times embraft, and kift a thousand more.

But now by this, with noyse of late vprore,
The hue and cry was rayfed all about ;
And all the *Brigants* flocking in great store,
Vnto the caue gan preasse, nought hauing dout
Of that was doen, and entred in a rout.
But *Calidore* in th'entry clofe did stand,
And entertayning them with courage stout,
Still flew the formost, that came first to hand,
So long till all the entry was with bodies mand.

Tho when no more could nigh to him approach, 420
He breath'd his sword, and rested him till day :
Which when he spyde vpon the earth t'encroch,
Through the dead carcases he made his way ;
Mongst which he found a sword of better say,
With which he forth went into th'open light :
Where all the rest for him did readie stay,
And fierce assayling him with all their might
Gan all vpon him lay : there gan a dreadfull fight. /

How many flies in whottest fommers day
Do seize vpon some beast, whose flesh is bare, 430
That all the place with swarmes do ouerlay,
And with their litle stings right selly fare ;
So many theeues about him swarming are,
All which do him assayle on euery side,
And fore oppresse, ne any him doth spare:
But he doth with his raging brond diuide
Their thickest troupes, & round about him scattreth wide.

l. 423, ; for ,—accepted : l. 429, 'hottest.'

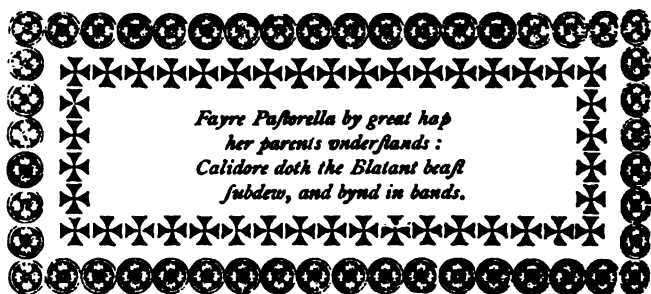
Like as a Lion mongft an heard of dere,
 Disperfeth them to catch his choyfeft pray ;
 So did he fly amongft them here and there, 440
 And all that nere him came, did hew and flay,
 Till he had ftrowd with bodies all the way ;
 That none his daunger daring to abide,
 Fled from his wrath, and did themfelues conuay
 Into their caues, their heads from death to hide,
 Ne any left, that victorie to him enuide.

Then backe returning to his deareft deare,
 He her gan to recomfort, all he might,
 With gladfull fpeeches, and with louely cheare,
 And forth her bringing to the ioyous light, 450
 Whereof ſhe long had lackt the wiſhfull fight,
 Deuiz'd all goodly meanes, from her to driue
 The ſad remembrance of her wretched plight.
 So her vneath at laſt he did reuiue,
 That long had lyen dead, and made againe aliue.

This doen, into thoſe theeuifh dens he went,
 And thence did all the ſpoyles and theaſures take,
 Which they from many long had robd and rent,
 But fortune now the victors meed did make ;
 Of / which the beſt he did his Loue betake ; 460
 And alſo all thoſe flockes, which they before
 Had reft from *Melibæ*, and from his make,
 He did them all to *Coridon* reſtore :
 So droue them all away, and his Loue with him bore.

ll. 460, 464, capital L—accepted : l. 462, , after '*Melibæ*'—accepted :
 l. 463, : ſubſtituted for (.).

Cant. / XII.



Like as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde
 Directs her course vnto one certaine coast,
 Is met of many a counter winde and tyde,
 With which her winged speed is let and croft,
 And she her selfe in stormie furies tost ; 10
 Yet making many a borde, and many a bay,
 Still winneth way, ne hath her compasse lost :
 Right so it fares with me in this long way,
 Whose course is often stayd, yet neuer is astray.

For all that hetherto hath long delayd
 This gentle knight, from sewing his first quest,
 Though out of course, yet hath not bene mis-fayd,
 To shew the courtesie by him profest,
 Euen vnto the lowest and the least. 15
 But now I come into my course againe, 20
 To his atchieuement of the *Blatant beast* ;

l. 3, : for,—accepted : l. 15, 'hitherto.'

Who all this while at will did range and raine,
Whilst none was him to stop, nor none him to restraine. /

Sir *Calidore* when thus he now had raught
Faire *Pastorella* from those *Brigants* powre,
Vnto the Castle of *Belgard* her brought,
Whereof was Lord the good Sir *Bellamoure* ;
Who whylome was in his youthes freshest flowre
A lustie knight, as euer wielded speare,
And had endured many a dreadfull stoure 30
In bloudy battell for a Ladie deare,
The fayrest Ladie then of all that liuing were.

Her name was *Claribell* : whose father hight
The Lord of *Many Ilands*, farre renound
For his great riches and his greater might.
He through the wealth, wherein he did abound,
This daughter thought in wedlocke to have bound
Vnto the Prince of *Picteland* bordering nere,
But she whose fides before with secret wound
Of loue to *Bellamoure* empierced were, 40
By all meanes shund to match with any forrein fere.

And *Bellamour* againe so well her pleased,
With dayly seruice and attendance dew,
That of her loue he was entyrelly seized,
And closely did her wed, but knowne to few.
Which when her father vnderstood, he grew
In so great rage, that them in dongeon deepe
Without compassion cruelly he threw ;

Yet did so streightly them a sunder keepe,
That neither could to company of th'other creepe. 50

Nathlesse Sir *Bellamour*, whether through grace
Of secret guifts so with his keepers wrought,
That to his loue sometimes he came in place,
Whereof her wombe vnwist to wight was fraught, 6
And / in dew time a mayden child forth brought.
Which she streight way for dread leaft, if her syre
Should know thereof, to slay he would haue fought,
Deliuered to her handmayd, that for hyre
She should it cause be fostred vnder straunge attyre.

The trustie damzell bearing it abrode 60
Into the emptie fields, where liuing wight
Mote not bewray the secret of her lode,
She forth gan lay vnto the open light
The litle babe, to take thereof a fight.
Whom whyleft she did with watrie eyne behold,
Vpon the litle breft like christall bright,
She mote perceiue a litle purple mold,
That like a rose her filken leaues did faire vnfold.

Well she it markt, and pittied the more,
Yet could not remedie her wretched case; 70
But closing it againe like as before,
Bedeaw'd with teares there left it in the place:
Yet left not quite, but drew a litle space
Behind the bushes, where she her did hyde,
To weet what mortall hand, or heauens grace

ll. 56-7, (*for . . . fought*): l. 58, (*for hyre*): l. 66, (*like . . . bright*):
l. 70. ; for,—accepted.

Would for the wretched infants helpe prouyde,
For which it loudly cald, and pittifully cryde.

At length a Shepheard, which there by did keepe
His fleecie flocke vpon the playnes around,
Led with the infants cry, that loud did weepe, 80
Came to the place ; where when he wrapped found
Th'abandon'd spoyle, he softly it vnbound ;
And seeing there, that did him pittie sore,
He tooke it vp, and in his mantle wound ;
So home vnto his honeft wife it bore,
Who as her owne it nurft, and named euermore. /

Thus long continu'd *Claribell* a thrall,
And *Bellamour* in bands, till that her fyre
Departed life, and left vnto them all.
Then all the stormes of fortunes former yre 90
Were turnd, and they to freedome did retyre.
Thenceforth they ioy'd in happinesse together, 10
And liued long in peace and loue entyre,
Without disquiet or dislike of ether,
Till time that *Calidore* brought *Pastorella* thether.

Both whom they goodly well did entertaine ;
For *Bellamour* knew *Calidore* right well,
And loued for his prowesse, fith they twaine 11
Long since had fought in field. Als *Claribell*
No lesse did tender the faire *Pastorell*, 100
Seeing her weake and wan, through durance long.
There they a while together thus did dwell

In much delight, and many ioyes among,
Vntill the damzell gan to wex more sound and strong.

Tho gan Sir *Calidore* him to aduize
Of his first quest, which he had long forlore ;
Afhm'd to thinke, how he that enterprize,
The which the Faery Queene had long afore 12
Bequeath'd to him, forslacked had so fore ;
That much he feared, least reprochfull blame 110
With foule dishonour him mote blot therefore ;
Besides the losse of so much praife and fame,
As through the world thereby should glorifie his name.

Therefore refoluing to returne in haft
Vnto so great atchieuement, he bethought 13
To leaue his Loue, now perill being past,
With *Claribell*, whylest he that monster fought
Through / out the world, and to destruction brought.
So taking leaue of his faire *Pastorell*,
Whom to recomfort, all the meanes he wrought, 120
With thanks to *Bellamour* and *Claribell*,
He went forth on his quest, and did, that him befell.

But first, ere I doe his aduentures tell,
In this exploite, me needeth to declare, 14
What did betide to the faire *Pastorell*,
During his absence left in heavy care,
Through daily mourning, and nightly misfare :
Yet did that auncient matrone all she might,
To cherish her with all things choice and rare ;

l. 106, ; for,—accepted : l. 112, '*praise*'—misprinted in '96 '*loos*' :
l. 116, capital L—accepted : l. 120 within ().

And her owne handmayd, that *Melissa* hight, 130
Appointed to attend her dewly day and night.

Who in a morning, when this Mayden faire
Was dighting her, hauing her snowy brest
As yet not laced, nor her golden haire
Into their comely tresses dewly drest, 135
Chaunst to espy vpon her yuory chest
The rosie marke, which she remembred well
That litle Infant had, which forth she kest,
The daughter of her Lady *Claribell*,
The which she bore, the whiles in prison she did dwell.

Which well auizing, streight she gan to cast 141
In her conceiptfull mynd, that this faire Mayd
Was that same infant, which so long sith past
She in the open fields had loosely layd 146
To Fortunes spoile, vnable it to ayd.
So full of ioy, streight forth she ran in hast
Vnto her mistresse, being halfe dismayd,
To tell her, how the heauens had her gaste,
To saue her chylde, which in misfortunes mouth was
plaste. /

The sober mother seeing such her mood, 150
Yet knowing not, what meant that sodaine thro,
Askt her, how mote her words be vnderstood,
And what the matter was, that mou'd her so. 157
My liefte (sayd she) ye know, that long ygo,
Whilest ye in durance dwelt, ye to me gaue
A little mayde, the which ye chylded tho ;

ll. 133-5, (*hauing* . . . *drest*) : l. 143, '*since*' : l. 145, capital L—
accepted : l. 151 within ().

The fame againe if now ye list to haue,
The fame is yonder Lady, whom high God did saue.

Much was the Lady troubled at that speach,
And gan to question streight how she it knew. 160
Most certaine markes, (sayd she) do me it teach,
For on her brest I with these eyes did vew
The litle purple rose, which thereon grew, 18
Whereof her name ye then to her did giue.
Besides her countenance, and her likely hew,
Matched with equall yeares, do surely priue
That yond fame is your daughter sure, which yet doth
liue.

The matrone stayd no lenger to enquire,
But forth in hast ran to the straunger Mayd ;
Whom catching greedily for great desire, 170
Rent vp her brest, and bosome open layd,
In which that rose she plainly saw displayd. 19
Then her embracing twixt her armes twaine,
She long so held, and softly weeping sayd ;
And liuest thou my daughter now againe ?
And art thou yet aliue, whom dead I long didaine.

Tho further asking her of fundry things,
And times comparing with their accidents, 20
She found at last by very certaine signes,
And speaking markes of passed monuments, 180
That this young Mayd, whom chance to her presents
Is / her owne daughter, her owne infant deare.
Tho wondering long at those so straunge euent,
A thousand times she her embraced nere,
With many a ioyfull kisse, and many a melting teare.

Who euer is the mother of one chylde,
 Which hauing thought long dead, she fyndes aliue,
 Let her by prooffe of that, which she hath fylde
 In her owne breast, this mothers ioy descricue :
 For other none such passion can contriue 190
 In perfect forme, as this good Lady felt,
 When she so faire a daughter saw suruiue, 21
 As *Pastorella* was, that nigh she swelt
 For passing ioy, which did all into pittie melt.

Thence running forth vnto her loued Lord,
 She vnto him recounted, all that fell :
 Who ioyning ioy with her in one accord,
 Acknowledg'd for his owne faire *Pastorell*.
 There leaue we them in ioy, and let vs tell 22
 Of *Calidore* ; who seeking all this while 200
 That monstrous Beast by finall force to quell,
 Through euery place, with restlesse paine and toile
 Him follow'd, by the tract of his outrageous spoile.

Through all estates he found that he had past,
 In which he many massacres had left,
 And to the Clergy now was come at last ; 23
 In which such spoile, such hauocke, and such theft
 He wrought, that thence all goodnesse he bereft,
 That endlesse were to tell. The Elfin Knight,
 Who now no place besides vnfought had left, 210
 At length into a Monastere did light,
 Where he him found despoyling all with maine & might.

Into their cloysters now he broken had,
 Through which the Monckes he chaced here & there./

And them purfu'd into their dortours fad,
 And searched all their cels and secrets neare ;
 In which what filth and ordure did appeare,
 Were yrkesome to report ; yet that foule Beast
 Nought sparing them, the more did tosse and teare,
 And ranfacke all their dennes from most to leaft, 220
 Regarding nought religion, nor their holy heaft.

From thence into the sacred Church he broke,
 And robd the Chancell, and the deskes downe threw,
 And Altars fouled, and blasphemy spoke,
 And th'Images for all their goodly hew,
 Did cast to ground, whilest none was them to rew ;
 So all confounded and disordered there.
 But seeing *Calidore*, away he flew,
 Knowing his fatall hand by former feare ;
 But he him fast pursuing, soone approached neare. 230

Him in a narrow place he ouertooke,
 And fierce assailing forst him turne againe :
 Sternely he turnd againe, when he him strooke
 With his sharpe steele, and ran at him amaine
 With open mouth, that seemed to containe
 A full good pecke within the vtmost brim,
 All set with yron teeth in raunges twaine,
 That terrifide his foes, and armed him,
 Appearing like the mouth of *Orcus* griesly grim.
 And therein were a thousand tongs empight, 240
 Of sundry kindes, and sundry quality ;
 Some were of dogs, that barked day and night,

And some of cats, that wrawling still did cry.
 And some of Beares, that groynd continually,
 And some of Tygres, that did sceme to gren,
 And snar at all, that euer passed by :
 But / most of them were tongues of mortall men,
 Which spake reprochfully, not caring where nor when.

And them amongst were mingled here and there,
 The tongues of Serpents with three forked stings, 28
 That spat out poyson and gore bloody gere 250
 At all, that came within his raueninges,
 And spake licentious words, and hatefull things
 Of good and bad alike, of low and hie ;
 Ne Kefars spared he a whit, nor Kings,
 But either blotted them with infamie,
 Or bit them with his banefull teeth of iniury.

But *Calidore* thereof no whit afrayd,
 Rencountred him with so impetuous might,
 That th'outrage of his violence he stayd, 260
 And bet abacke, threatning in vaine to bite,
 And spitting forth the poyson of his spight,
 That fomed all about his bloody iawes. 29
 Tho rearing vp his former feete on hight,
 He rampt vpon him with his rauenous pawes,
 As if he would haue rent him with his cruell clawes.

But he right well aware, his rage to ward,
 Did cast his shield atweene, and therewithall 30
 Putting his puissaunce forth, purfu'd so hard,
 That backward he enforced him to fall: 270

And being downe, ere he new helpe could call,
 His shield he on him threw, and fast downe held ;
 Like as a bullocke, that in bloody stall
 Of butchers balefull hand to ground is feld,
 Is forcibly kept downe, till he be throughly queld.

Full cruelly the Beast did rage and rore,
 To be downe held, and maystred so with might, /
 That he gan fret and fume out bloody gore, 3
 Striuing in vaine to rere him selfe vpright.
 For still the more he stroue, the more the Knight
 Did him suppress, and forcibly subdew ; 281
 That made him almost mad for fell despight.
 He grind, hee bit, he scratcht, he venim threw,
 And fared like a feend, right horrible in hew.

Or like the hell-borne *Hydra*, which they faine 32
 That great *Alcides* whilome ouerthrew,
 After that he had labourd long in vaine,
 To crop his thousand heads, the which still new
 Forth budded, and in greater number grew.
 Such was the fury of this hellish Beast, 290
 Whilest *Calidore* him vnder him downe threw ;
 Who nathemore his heauy load releast,
 But aye the more he rag'd, the more his powre increast.

Tho when the Beast saw, he mote nought auaile,
 By force, he gan his hundred tongues apply,
 And sharpely at him to reuile and raile,
 With bitter termes of shamefull infamy ;
 Oft interlacing many a forged lie,
 Whose like he neuer once did speake, nor heare,
 Nor euer thought thing so vnworthily :

Yet did he nought for all that him forbear,
But strained him so streightly that he chokt him neare.

At last when as he found his force to shrink,
And rage to quail, he tooke a muzzell strong
Of surest yron, made with many a lincke ;
Therewith he mured vp his mouth along,
And therein shut vp his blasphemous tong,
For neuer more defaming gentle Knight,
Or vnto louely Lady doing wrong :
And / thereunto a great long chaine he tight, 310
With which he drew him forth, euē in his own despight.

Like as whylome that strong *Tirynthian* swaine,
Brought forth with him the dreadfull dog of hell,
Against his will fast bound in yron chaine ;
And roring horribly, did him compell
To see the hatefull sunne, that he might tell
To griesly *Pluto*, what on earth was donne,
And to the other damned ghosts, which dwell
For aye in darkenesse, which day light doth shonne :
So led this Knight his captyue with like conquest wonne.

Yet greatly did the Beast repine at those 321
Straunge bands, whose like till then he neuer bore,
Ne euer any durst till then impose,
And chauffed inly, seeing now no more
Him liberty was left aloud to rore :
Yet durst he not draw backe ; nor once withstand
The proued powre of noble *Calidore*,

But trembled vnderneath his mighty hand,
And like a fearefull dog him followed through the land.

Him through all Faery land he follow'd fo, 330
As if he learned had obedience long,
That all the people where fo he did go,
Out of their townes did round about him throng,
To see him leade that Beast in bondage strong,
And seeing it, much wondred at the fight ;
And all such persons, as he earst did wrong,
Reioyced much to see his captiue plight, (Knight.
And much admyr'd the Beast, but more admyr'd the

Thus was this Monster by the maystring might
Of doughty *Calidore*, supprest and tamed, 340
That neuer more he mote endammadge wight
With his vile tongue, which many had defamed, /
And many causelesse caused to be blamed :
So did he eeke long after this remaine,
Vntill that, whether wicked fate so framed,
Or fault of men, he broke his yron chaine,
And got into the world at liberty againe.

Thenceforth more mischief and more scath he wrought
To mortall men, then he had done before ;
Ne euer could by any more be brought 350
Into like bands, ne maystred any more :
Albe that long time after *Calidore*,
The good Sir *Pelleas* him tooke in hand,
And after him Sir *Lamoracke* of yore,

And all his brethren borne in Britaine land ;
Yet none of them could euer bring him into band.

So now he raungeth through the world againe,
And rageth fore in each degree and state ;
Ne any is, that may him now restraine,
He growen is so great and strong of late, 360
Barking and biting all that him doe bate,
Albe they worthy blame, or cleare of crime :
Ne spareth he most learned wits to rate,
Ne spareth he the gentle Poets rime,
But rends without regard of perfon or of time.

Ne may this homely verse, of many meanest,
Hope to escape his venemous despite,
More then my former writs, all were they clearest
From blamefull blot, and free from all that wite,
With which some wicked tongues did it backebite,
And bring into a mighty Peres displeasure, 371
That neuer so deferued to endite.

Therefore do you my rimes keep better measure, (sure.
And seeke to please, that now is counted wisemens threa-

l. 363, '*gentle*': l. 367, misprinted '*H'ope*' in '96: l. 368, Dr. Morris mistakenly records '96 as reading '*cleanst*,' and Professor Child as reading '*cleaneft*,' whereas it is '*clearest*' in '96: l. 375—in 1609 '*The end of the first Booke*.'



TWO CANTOS

OF

MVTABILITIE:

Which, both for Forme and Matter, appeare to be
parcell of some following Booke of the

FAERIE QVEENE,

(. . .)

VNDER THE LEGEND

OF

Constancie.

Neuer before imprinted.





NOTE.

See our Life of Spenser in Vol. I. on these 'Two Cantos.' It is doubtful whether they were meant to form part of the 'Faery Queene.' They make a charming independent poem on 'Mutability'—one of Spenser's favourite themes. These 'Two Cantos' first appeared in the folio edition of the 'Faery Queene' of 1609, and were reprinted in 1611. The latter offers a few very slight corrections.—A. B. G.



Cant. VI.

Proud Change (*not pleas'd, in mortall things,*
beneath the Moone, to raigne)
Pretends, as well of Gods, as Men,
to be the Soueraine.

What man that sees the euer-whirling wheele
Of *Change*, the which all mortall things doth
But that therby doth find, & plainly feele, (fway,
How *MVTABILITY* in them doth play
Her cruell sports, to many mens decay ? 20
Which that to all may better yet appeare,
I will rehearse that whylome I heard say,
How she at first her selfe began to reare, (beare.
Gainst all the Gods, and th'empire sought from them to

But first, here falleth fittest to vnfold
Her antique race and linage ancient,
As I haue found it registred of old,
In *Faery Land* mongst records permanent:
She was, to weet, a daughter by descent
Of those old *Titans*, that did whylome strue 30

With *Saturnes* sonne for *heavens* regiment.
Whom, though high *Ioue* of *kingdome* did depriue,
Yet many of their *stemme* long *after* did suruiue.

And / many of them, afterwards obtain'd
Great power of *Ioue*, and high authority ;
As *Hecatt*, in whose almighty hand,
He plac't all rule and principality,
To be by her disposed diuerfly,
To Gods, and men, as she them list diuide :
And drad *Bellona*, that doth sound on hie 40
Warres and allarums vnto Nations wide,
That makes both heauen & earth to tremble at her pride.

So likewise did this *Titaneffe* aspire,
Rule and dominion to her selfe to gaine ;
That as a Goddesse, men might her admire,
And heauenly honours yield, as to them twaine.
And first, on earth she fought it to obtaine ;
Where the such prooffe and sad examples shewed
Of her great power, to many ones great paine,
That not men onely (whom she soone subdewed) 50
But eke all other creatures, her bad dooings rewed.

For, the the face of earthly things so changed,
That all which Nature had establisht first
In good estate, and in meet order ranged,
She did pervert, and all their statutes burst :
And all the worlds faire frame (which none yet durst
Of Gods or men to alter or misguide)
She alter'd quite, and made them all accurst
That God had blest ; and did at first prouide
In that still happy state for euer to abide. 60

Ne flee the lawes of Nature onely brake,
But eke of Iustice, and of Policie ;
And wrong of right, and bad of good did make,
And death for life exchanged foolishlie :
Since which, all liuing wights haue learn'd to die,
And all this world is woxen daily worfe.
O pittious worke of *MVTABILITIE* !
By which, we all are subiect to that curse,
And death in stead of life haue sucked from our Nurfe.

And now, when all the earth she thus had brought 70
To her behest, and thrall'd to her might,
She gan to cast in her ambitious thought,
T'attempt th'empire of the heauens hight,
And *Ioue* himselfe to shoulder from his right.
And first, she past the region of the ayre,
And of the fire, whose substance thin and flight,
Made no resistance, ne could her contraire,
But ready passage to her pleasure did prepaire.

Thence, to the Circle of the Moone she clambe,
Where *Cynthia* raignes in euerlasting glory, 80
To whose bright shining palace straight she came,
All fairely deckt with heauens goodly story:
Whose siluer gates, (by which there sate an hory
Old aged Sire, with hower-glasse in hand,
Hight *Tyme*) she entred, were he lief or sory :
Ne staide till she the highest stage had scand,
VVhere *Cynthia* did sit, that neuer still did stand.

Her sitting on an Iuory throne shee found,
Drawne of two steeds, th'one black, the other white,

Environd with tenne thousand starres around, 90
 That duly her attended day and night ;
 And by her side, there ran her Page, that hight
Vesper, whom we the Euening-starre intend :
 That with his Torche, still twinkling like twylight,
 Her lightened all the way where she should wend,
 And ioy to weary wandring trauailers did lend :

That when the hardy *Titanesse* beheld
 The goodly building of her Palace bright,
 Made of the heauens substance, and vp-held
 With thousand Crystall pillors of huge hight, 100
 Shee gan to burne in her ambitious spright,
 And t'envie her that in such glorie raigned.
 Eftsoones she cast by force and tortious might,
 Her to displace ; and to her selfe to haue gained
 The kingdome of the Night, and waters by her wained.

Boldly she bid the Goddesse downe descend,
 And let her selfe into that Ivory throne ;
 For, shee her selfe more worthy thereof wend,
 And better able it to guide alone :
 Whether to men, whose fall she did bemone, 110
 Or vnto Gods, whose state she did maligne,
 Or to th'infernall Powers, her need giue lone
 Of her faire light, and bounty most benigne,
 Her selfe of all that rule shee deemed most condigne.

But shee that had to her that foueraigne seat
 By highest *Ioue* assign'd, therein to beare
 Nights burning lamp, regarded not her threat,
 Ne yielded ought for fauour or for feare ;

But with sterne countenaunce and disdainfull cheare,
Bending her horned browes, did put her back : 120
And boldly blaming her for comming there,
Bade her attonce from heauens coast to pack,
Or at her perill bide the wrathfull Thunders wrack.

Yet nathemore the *Giantesse* forbare :

But boldly preacing-on, raught forth her hand
To pluck her downe perforce from off her chaire ;
And there-with lifting vp her golden wand,
Threatned to strike her if she did with-stand.
Where-at the starres, which round about her blazed,
And eke the Moones bright wagon, still did stand,
All beeing with so bold attempt amazed, 131
And on her vncouth habit and sterne looke still gazed.

Meane-while, the lower World, which nothing knew

Of all that chaunced here, was darkned quite ;
And eke the heauens, and all the heauenly crew
Of happy wights, now vnpurvaide of light,
Were much afraid, and wondred at that fight ;
Fearing leaft *Chaos* broken had his chaine,
And brought againe on them eternall night :
But chiefly *Mercury*, that next doth raigne, 140
Ran forth in haste, vnto the king of Gods to plaine.

All / ran together with a great out-cry,

To *Ioues* faire Palace, fixt in heauens hight ;
And beating at his gates full earnestly,
Gan call to him aloud with all their might,
To know what meant that suddaine lack of light.
The father of the Gods when this he heard,
Was troubled much at their so strange affright,

Doubting leaft *Typhon* were againe vprear'd,
Or other his old foes, that once him forely fear'd. 150

Eftfoones the sonne of *Maia* forth he sent
Downe to the Circle of the Moone, to knowe
The cause of this so strange astonishment,
And why shee did her wonted course forflowe ;
And if that any were on earth belowe
That did with charmes or Magick her molest,
Him to attache, and downe to hell to throwe :
But, if from heauen it were, then to arrest
The Author, and him bring before his prefence prest.

The wingd-foot God, so fast his plumes did beat, 160
That soone he came where-as the *Titaneffe*
Was striuing with faire *Cynthia* for her feat :
At whose strange fight, and haughty hardinesse,
He wondred much, and feared her no lesse.
Yet laying feare aside to doe his charge,
At last, he bade her (with bold stedfastnesse)
Ceasse to molest the Moone to walke at large,
Or come before high *Ioue*, her dooings to discharge.

And there-with-all, he on her shoulder laid
His snaky-wreathed Mace, whose awfull power 170
Doth make both Gods and hellish fiends affraid :
VVhere-at the *Titaneffe* did sternely lower,
And stoutly answer'd, that in euill hower
He from his *Ioue* such message to her brought,
To bid her leaue faire *Cynthias* siluer bower ;
Sith shee his *Ioue* and him esteemed nought,
No more then *Cynthia's* selfe ; but all their kingdoms
fought.

The Heauens Herald staid not to reply,
But past away, his doings to relate
Vnto his Lord ; who now in th'highest sky, 180
VVas placed in his principall Estate,
VVith all the Gods about him congregated :
To whom when *Hermes* had his message told,
It did them all exceedingly amate, (bold,
Saue *Ioue* ; who, changing nought his count'nance
Did vnto them at length these speeches wife vnfold ;

Harken to mee awhile yee heauenly Powers ;
Ye may remember since th'Earths curfed seed
Sought to assaile the heauens eternall towers,
And to vs all exceeding feare did breed : 190
But how we then defeated all their deed,
Yee all doe knowe, and them destroyed quite ;
Yet not so quite, but that there did succeed
An off-spring of their bloud, which did alite
Vpon the fruitfull earth, which doth vs yet despite.

Of that bad seed is this bold woman bred,
That now with bold presumption doth aspire
To thrust faire *Phæbe* from her siluer bed,
And eke our selues from heauens high Empire,
If that her might were match to her desire : 200
VVherefore, it now behoues vs to aduise
What way is best to driue her to retire ;
Whether by open force or counsell wife,
Areed ye fonnes of God, as best ye can deuise.

So hauing said, he ceaf ; and with his brow
(His black eye-brow, whose doomefull dreaded beck

Is wont to wield the world vnto his vow,
 And euen the highest Powers of heauen to check)
 Made signe to them in their degrees to speake: 210
 Who straight gan cast their counsell graue and wife.
 Meane-while, th'Earths daughter, thogh she nought
 Of *Hermes* message; yet gan now advise, (did reck
 What course were best to take in this hot bold emprise.

Eftsoones she thus resolv'd; that whil't the Gods
 (After returne of *Hermes* Embassie)
 Were troubled, and amongst themselues at ods,
 Before they could new counsels re-allie,
 To set vpon them in that extasie;
 And take what fortune time and place would lend:
 So, forth she rose, and through the purest sky 220
 To *Ioues* high Palace straight cast to ascend,
 To prosecute her plot; Good on-set boads good end.

Shee there arriuing, boldly in did pass;
 Where all the Gods she found in counsell close,
 All quite vnarm'd, as then their manner was.
 At sight of her they suddaine all arose,
 In great amaze, ne wist what way to chose.
 But *Ioue*, all fearelesse, forc't them to aby;
 And in his soueraine throne, gan straight dispose
 Himselfe more full of grace and Maiestie, 230
 That mote encheare his friends, & foes mote terrifie.

That, when the haughty *Titaneffe* beheld,
 All were she fraught with pride and impudence,
 Yet with the sight thereof was almost queld;
 And inly quaking, seem'd as rest of sense,

And voyd of speech in that drad audience ;
Vntill that *Ioue* himselfe, her selfe bespake :
Speake thou fraile woman, speake with confidence,
Whence art thou, and what doost thou here now make?
What idle errand hast thou, earths mansion to forsake?

Shee, halfe confused with his great commaund, 241
Yet gathering spirit of her natures pride,
Him boldly answer'd thus to his demaund :
I am a daughter, by the mothers side,
Of her that is Grand-mother magnifide
Of all the Gods, great *Earth*, great *Chaos* child :
But by the fathers (be it not envide)
I greater am in bloud (whereon I build)
Then all the Gods, though wrongfully from heauen exil'd.

For, / *Titan* (as ye all acknowledge must) 250
Was *Saturnes* elder brother by birth-right ;
Both, sonnes of *Vranus* : but by vniust
And guilefull meanes, through *Corybantes* flight,
The younger thrust the elder from his right :
Since which, thou *Ioue*, iniuriously hast held
The Heauens rule from *Titans* sonnes by might ;
And them to hellish dungeons downe hast feld :
Witnesse ye Heauens the truth of all that I haue teld.

Whil't she thus spake, the Gods that gaue good eare
To her bold words, and marked well her grace, 260
Beeing of stature tall as any there
Of all the Gods, and beautifull of face,
As any of the Goddeses in place,
Stood all astonied, like a fort of Steeres ;
Mongst whom, some beast of strange & forraine race,

Vnwares is chaunc't, far straying from his peeres :
So did their ghaftly gaze bewray their hidden feares.

Till hauing pauz'd awhile, *Ioue* thus bespake ;
VVill neuer mortall thoughts ceasse to aspire,
In this bold fort, to Heauen claime to make, 270
And touch celestiall seates with earthly mire ?
I would haue thought, that bold *Procrustes* hire,
Or *Typhons* fall, or proud *Ixions* paine,
Or great *Prometheus*, tasting of our ire,
Would haue suffiz'd, the rest for to refraine ;
And warn'd all men by their example to refraine :

But now, this off-scum of that curled fry,
Dare to renew the like bold enterprize,
And challenge th'heritage of this our skie ;
Whom what should hinder, but that we likewise 280
Should handle as the rest of her allies,
And thunder-driue to hell ? With that, he shooke
His Nectar-deawed locks, with which the skyes
And all the world beneath for terror quooke,
And eft his burning levin-brond in hand he tooke.

But, when he looked on her louely face,
In which, faire beames of beauty did appeare,
That could the greatest wrath soone turne to grace
(Such sway doth beauty euen in Heauen beare)
He staide his hand : and hauing chang'd his cheare,
He thus againe in milder wise began ;
But ah ! if Gods should striue with flesh yfere,
Then shortly should the progeny of Man
Be rooted out, if *Ioue* should doe still what he can :

But thee faire *Titans* child, I rather weene,
Through some vaine errour or inducement light,
To see that mortall eyes haue neuer seene ;
Or through ensample of thy sisters might,
Bellona ; whose great glory thou doost spight, 299
Since thou hast seene her dreadfull power belowe,
Mongst wretched men (dismaide with her affright)
To bandie Crownes, and Kingdomes to bestowe :
And sure thy worth, no lesse then hers doth seeme to
shewe.

But wote thou this, thou hardy *Titanesse*,
That not the worth of any liuing wight
May challenge ought in Heauens interesse ;
Much lesse the Title of old *Titans* Right :
For, we by Conquest of our soueraine might,
And by eternall doome of Fates decree,
Haue wonne the Empire of the Heauens bright ; 310
Which to ourselues we hold, and to whom wee
Shall worthy deeme partakers of our blisse to bee.

Then ceasse thy idle claime thou foolish gerle,
And seeke by grace and goodnesse to obtaine
That place from which by folly *Titan* fell ;
There-to thou maist perhaps, if so thou faine
Haue *Ioue* thy gracious Lord and Soueraigne.
So, hauing said, she thus to him replide ;
Ceasse *Saturnes* sonne, to seeke by proffers vaine
Of idle hopes t'allure mee to thy fide, 320
For to betray my Right, before I haue it tride.

But thee, ô *Ioue*, no equall Iudge I deeme
Of my desert, or of my dewfull Right ;

That in thine owne behalfe maist partiall seeme :
 But to the higheft him, that is behight
 Father of Gods and men by equall might;
 To weet, the God of Nature, I appeale.
 There-at *Ioue* waxed wroth, and in his fpright
 Did inly grudge, yet did it well conceale ;
 And bade *Dan Phæbus* Scribe her Appellation feale.

Eftfoones the time and place appointed were, 331
 Where all, both heauenly Powers, & earthly wights,
 Before great Natures prefence should appeare,
 For triall of their Titles and beft Rights :
 That was, to weet, vpon the higheft hights
 Of *Arlo-hill* (Who knowes not *Arlo-hill* ?)
 That is the higheft head (in all mens fights)
 Of my old father *Mole*, whom Shepheards quill
 Renowned hath with hymnes fit for a rural skill.

And, were it not ill fitting for this file, 340
 To fing of hilles & woods, mongft warres & Knights,
 I would abate the fternenefle of my stile,
 Mongft thefe fterne founds to mingle foft delights ;
 And tell how *Arlo* through *Dianaes* fpirights
 (Beeing of old the beft and faireft Hill
 That was in all this holy-Islands hights)
 Was made the moft vnpleafant, and moft ill.
 Meane while, ô *Clio*, lend *Calliope* thy quill.

Whylome, when *IRELAND* florished in fame
 Of wealths and goodneffe, far aboue the reft 350
 Of all that beare the *British* Islands name,
 The Gods then vs'd (for pleafure and for reft)

Oft to resort there-to, when seem'd them best :
But none of all there-in more pleasure found,
Then *Cynthia* ; that is souveraine Queene profest
Of woods and Forrests, which therein abound, (ground.
Sprinkled with wholsom waters, more thē most on

But / mongst them all, as fittest for her game,
Either for chace of beasts with hound or boawe,
Or for to shroude in shade from *Phæbus* flame, 360
Or bathe in fountaines that doe freshly flowe,
Or from high hilles, or from the dales belowe,
She chose this *Arlo* ; where shee did resort
With all her Nymphes enanged on a rowe,
With whom the woody Gods did oft consort :
For, with the Nymphes, the Satyres loue to play & sport.

Amongst the which, there was a Nymph that hight
Molanna ; daughter of old father *Mole*,
And sister vnto *Mulla*, faire and bright :
Vnto whose bed false *Bregog* whylome stole, 370
That Shepheard *Colin* dearely did condole,
And made her lucklesse loues well knowne to be,
But this *Molanna*, were she not so shole,
Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee :
Yet as she is, a fairer flood may no man see.

For, first, she springs out of two marble Rocks,
On which, a groue of Oakes high mounted growes,
That as a girlond seemes to deck the locks
Of som faire Bride, brought forth with pompous shoves
Out of her bowre, that many flowers strowes : 380
So, through the flowry Dales she tumbling downe,
Through many woods, and shady coverts flowes

(That on each Tide her filuer channell crowne)
Till to the Plaine she come, whose Valleyes shee doth
drowne.

In her sweet fireames, *Diana* vied oft
(After her sweatie chase and toilefome play)
To bathe her selfe ; and after, on the soft
And downy grasse, her dainty limbes to lay
In covert shade, where none behold her may :
For, much she hated sight of living eye. 390
Foolish God *Faunus*, though full many a day
He saw her clad, yet longed foolishly
To see her naked amongst her Nymphes in privacy.

No way he found to compasse his desire,
But to corrupt *Maiana*, this her maid,
Her to discover for some secret hire :
So, her with flattering words he first assaid ;
And after, pleasing gifts for her purvaid,
Queene-apples, and red Cherries from the tree,
VVith which he her allured and betraid, 400
To tell what time he might her Lady see
When she her selfe did bathe, that he might secret bee.

There-to hee promist, if shee would him pleasure
With this small boone, to quit her with a better ;
To weet, that where-as shee had out of measure
Long lov'd the *Fanchin*, who by nought did set her,
That he would undertake, for this to get her
To be his Loue, and of him liked well :
Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter
For many moe good turnes then he would tell ; 410
The least of which, this little pleasure should excell.

The fimple maid did yield to him anone ;
 And eft him placed where he clofe might view
 That neuer any faw, faue onely one ;
 VVho, for his hire to fo foole-hardy dew,
 Was of his hounds devour'd in Hunters hew.
 Tho, as her manner was on funny day,
Diana, with her Nymphes about her, drew
 To this fweet fpring ; where, doffing her array,
 She bath'd her louely limbes, for *Ioue* a likely pray. 420

There *Faunus* faw that pleased much his eye,
 And made his hart to tickle in his breft,
 That for great ioy of fome-what he did fpy,
 He could him not containe in filent reft ;
 But breaking forth in laughter, loud profest
 His foolifh thought. O foolifh *Faune* indeed,
 That couldft not hold thy felfe fo hidden bleft,
 But wouldeft needs thine owne conceit areed.
 Babblers vnworthy been of fo diuine a meed.

The Goddeffe, all abafhed with that noife, 430
 In hafte forth fstarted from the guilty brooke ;
 And running ftraight where-as fhe heard his voice,
 Enclos'd the bufh about, and there him tooke,
 Like darred Larke ; not daring vp to looke
 On her whofe fight before fo much he fought.
 Thence, forth they drew him by the hornes, & fhooke
 Nigh all to peeces, that they left him nought ;
 And then into the open light they forth him brought.

Like as an hufwife, that with bufie care
 Thinks of her Dairie to make wondrous gaine, 440

l. 426, 'A' of 1609 and 1611 I change to 'O.'

Finding where-as some wicked beast vnware
 That breakes into her Dayr'house, there doth draine
 Her creaming pannes, and frustrate all her paine ;
 Hath in some snare or gin set close behind,
 Entrapped him, and caught into her traine,
 Then thinks what punishment were best assign'd,
 And thousand deaths deuifeth in her vengefull mind :

So did *Diana* and her maydens all
 Vse silly *Faunus*, now within their baile :
 They mocke and scorne him, and him soule miscall ;
 Some by the nose him pluckt, some by the taile, 451
 And by his goatish beard some did him haile :
 Yet he (poore soule) with patience all did beare ;
 For, nought against their wils might countervaille :
 Ne ought he said what euer he did heare ;
 But hanging downe his head, did like a Mome appeare.

At length, when they had flouted him their fill,
 They gan to cast what penaunce him to giue.
 Some would haue gelt him, but that same would spill
 The Wood-gods breed, which must for euer liue: 460
 Others would through the riuer him haue driue,
 And ducked deepe : but that seem'd penaunce light;
 But most agreed and did this sentence giue,
 Him in Deares skin to clad ; & in that plight,
 To hunt him with their hounds, him selfe saue how hee
 might.

But / *Cynthia's* selfe, more angry then the rest,
 Thought not enough, to punish him in sport,
 And of her shame to make a gamesome iest ;
 But gan examine him in straighter fort,

Which of her Nymphes, or other clofe confort, 470
Him thither brought, and her to him betraid ?
He, much affeard, to her confessed fhort,
That 'twas *Molanna* which her fo bewraid.
Then all attonce their hands vpon *Molanna* laid.

But him (according as they had decreed)
With a Deeres-fkin they couered, and then chafte
With all their hounds that after him did fpeed ;
But he more fpeedy, from them fled more faft
Then any Deere : fo fore him dread aghaft.
They after follow'd all with shrill out-cry, 480
Shouting as they the heauens would haue braft :
That all the woods and dales where he did flie,
Did ring againe, and loud reeccho to the fkie.

So they him follow'd till they weary were ;
When, back returning to *Molann'* againe,
They, by commaund'ment of *Diana*, there
Her whelm'd with ftones. Yet *Faunus* (for her paine)
Of her beloued *Fanchin* did obtaine,
That her he would receiue vnto his bed.
So now her waues paffe through a pleafant Plaine,
Till with the *Fanchin* fhe her felfe doe wed, 491
And (both combin'd) themfelues in one faire riuer fpred.

Nath'leffe, *Diana*, full of indignation,
Thence-forth abandond her delicious brooke ;
In whose sweet ftream, before that bad occafion,
So much delight to bathe her limbes fhe tooke :
Ne only her, but alfo quite forfooke
All thofe faire forrefts about *Arlo* hid,
And all that Mountaine, which doth over-looke

The richest champion that may else be rid, 501
 And the faire *Shure*, in which are thousand Salmon
 bred.

Them all, and all that she so deare did way,
 Thence-forth she left ; and parting from the place,
 There-on an heauy haplesse curse did lay,
 To weet, that Wolues, where she was wont to space,
 Should harbour'd be, and all those Woods deface,
 And Thieues should rob and spoile that Coast around
 Since which, those Woods, and all that goodly Chase
 Doth to this day with Wolues and Thieues abound
 Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers since hau
 foud. 511

l. 500, '*champaign*' 1611.

Cant. VII.

*Pealing, from Ioue, to Natur's Bar,
bold Alteration plectres
Large Euidence : but Nature soone
her righteous Doome arades.*

AH! whither doost thou now thou greater Muse
Me from these woods & pleafing forrests bring?
And my fraile spirit (that dooth oft refuse
This too high flight, vnfit for her weake wing)
Lift vp aloft, to tell of heauens King 10
(Thy foueraine Sire) his fortunate successe,
And victory, in bigger noates to fing,
Which he obtain'd againft that *Titanesse*,
That him of heauens Empire fought to difpoffesse.

Yet fith I needs muft follow thy beheft,
Doe thou my weaker wit with skill inſpire,
Fit for this turne ; and in my ſable brest
Kindle freſh ſparks of that immortal fire,
Which learned minds inflameth with deſire
Of heavenly things : for, who but thou alone, 20
That art yborne of heauen and heavenly Sire,

l. 17, '*ſable*'—Dr. Morris reads '*feeble*.'

Can tell things doen in heauen so long ygone :
So farre past memory of man that may be knowne.

Now, at the time that was before agreed,
The Gods assembled all on *Arlo* hill ;
As well those that are sprung of heauenly seed,
As those that all the other world doe fill,
And rule both sea and land vnto their will :
Onely th'infernall Powers might not appeare ;
Aswell for horror of their count'naunce ill, 30
As for th'vnruely fiends which they did feare ;
Yet *Pluto* and *Proserpina* were present there.

And / thither also came all other creatures,
What-euer life or motion doe retaine,
According to their sundry kinds of features ;
That *Arlo* scarcely could them all containe ;
So full they filled euery hill and Plaine :
And had not *Natures* Sergeant (that is *Order*)
Them well disposed by his busie paine,
And raunged farre abroad in euery border, 40
They would haue caused much confusion and disorder.

Then forth issued (great goddesse) great dame *Nature*
With goodly port and gracious Maiesty ;
Being far greater and more tall of stature
Then any of the gods or Powers on hie :
Yet certes by her face and physnomy,
Whether she man or woman inly were,
That could not any creature well descry :
For, with a veile that wimpled euery where,
Her head and face was hid, that mote to none appeare

That some doe fay was so by skill deuized, 50
To hide the terror of her vncouth hew,
From mortall eyes that should be sore agrized;
For that her face did like a Lion shew,
That eye of wight could not indure to view :
But others tell that it so beautilous was,
And round about such beames of splendor threw,
That it the Sunne a thousand times did pass,
Ne could be feene, but like an image in a glasse.

That well may seemen true : for, well I weene 60
That this same day, when she on *Arlo* sat,
Her garment was so bright and wondrous sheene,
That my fraile wit cannot deuize to what
It to compare, nor finde like stuffe to that,
As those three sacred *Saints*, though else most wise,
Yet on mount *Thabor* quite their wits forgot,
When they their glorious Lord in strange disguise
Transfigur'd sawe ; his garments so did daze their
eyes.

In a fayre Plaine vpon an equall Hill,
She placed was in a pavilion ; 70
Not such as Craftes-men by their idle skill
Are wont for Princes states to fashion :
But th'earth her self of her owne motion,
Out of her fruitfull bosome made to growe
Most dainty trees ; that, shooting vp anon,
Did seeme to bow their blooming heads full lowe,
For homage vnto her, and like a throne did shew.

So hard it is for any liuing wight,
 All her array and vestiments to tell,
 That old *Dan Geffrey* (in whose gentle spright 80
 The pure well head of Poefie did dwell)
 In his *Foules parley* durst not with it mel,
 But it transferd to *Alane*, who he thought
 Had in his *Plaint of kindes* describ'd it well :
 Which who will read set forth so as it ought,
 Go seek he out that *Alane* where he may be fought.

And all the earth far vnderneath her feete
 Was dight with flowres, that voluntary grew
 Out of the ground, and sent forth odours sweet;
 Tenne thousand mores of sundry sent and hew, 90
 That might delight the smell, or please the view :
 The which, the Nymphes, from all the brooks thereby
 Had gathered, they at her foot-stoole threw;
 That richer seem'd then any tapestry,
 That Princes bowres adorne with painted imagery.

And *Mole* himfelfe, to honour her the more,
 Did deck himself in freshest faire attire,
 And his high head, that seemeth alwaies hore
 With hardned frosts of former winters ire,
 He with an Oaken girlond now did tire, 100
 As if the loue of some new Nymph late seene,
 Had in him kindled youthfull fresh desire,
 And made him change his gray attire to greene ;
 Ah gentle *Mole* ! such ioyance hath thee well befeene.

l. 78, '*hard*' (1611) accepted for '*heard*' of 1609: l. 84, '*kind:*' (Dr. Morris): l. 93, '*which they*' 1609 and 1611—corrected as in Dr. Morris.

Was neuer so great ioyance since the day,
That all the gods whylome asssembled were,
On *Hæmus* hill in their diuine array,
To celebrate the solemne bridall cheare,
Twixt *Peleus*, and dame *Thetis* pointed there ;
Where *Phæbus* self, that god of Poets hight, 110
They say did sing the spoufall hymne full cleere,
That all the gods were rauisht with delight
Of his celestially fong, & Musicks wondrous might.

This great Grandmother of all creatures bred
Great *Nature*, euer young yet full of eld,
Still moouing, yet vnmoued from her sted ;
Vnseene of any, yet of all beheld ;
Thus fitting in her throne as I haue teld,
Before her came dame *Mutabilitie* ;
And being lowe before her prefence feld, 120
With meek obayfance and humilitie,
Thus gan her plaintif Plea, with words to amplifie ;

To thee ô greateſt goddeſſe, onely great,
An humble ſuppliant loe, I lowely fly
Seeking for Right, which I of thee entreat ;
Who Right to all doſt deale indifferently,
Damning all Wrong and tortious Iniurie,
Which any of thy creatures doe to other
(Oppreſſing them with power, vnequally)
Sith of them all thou art the equall mother, 130
And knitteſt each to each, as brother vnto brother.

To thee therefore of this fame *Ioue* I plaine,
And of his fellow gods that faine to be,

l. 109, '*Peleus*'—obvious correction of '*Pelene*' of 1609 and 1611.

That challenge to themselves the whole worlds raigin;
 Of which, the greatest part is due to me,
 And heauen it selfe by heritage in Fee:
 For, heauen and earth I both alike do deeme,
 Sith heauen and earth are both alike to thee;
 And, gods no more then men thou doest esteeme:
 For, euen the gods to thee, as men to gods do seeme.

Then / weigh, ô soueraigne goddesse, by what right 141
 These gods do claime the worlds whole souerainty;
 And that is onely dew vnto my might
 Arrogate to themselves ambitiously:
 As for the gods owne principality,
 Which *Ioue* vsurpes vniustly; that to be
 My heritage, *Ioue's* self cannot deny,
 From my great Grandfire *Titan*, vnto mee,
 Deriv'd by dew descent; as is well known to thee.

Yet mauger *Ioue*, and all his gods beside, 150
 I doe possesse the worlds most regiment;
 As, if ye please it into parts diuide,
 And euery parts inholders to conuent,
 Shall to your eyes appeare incontinent.
 And first, the Earth (great mother of vs all)
 That only seems vnmov'd and permanent,
 And vnto *Mutability* not thrall;
 Yet is she chang'd in part, and eeke in generall.

For, all that from her springs, and is ybredde,
 How-euer fayre it flourish for a time, 160
 Yet see we foone decay; and, being dead
 To turne again vnto their earthly slime:

l. 139, 'esteeme' is corrected: l. 142, 'my' correction in 1611 of 'thy' in 1609.

Yet, out of their decay and mortall crime,
We daily see new creatures to arize ;
And of their Winter spring another Prime,
Vnlike in forme, and chang'd by strange disguise ;
So turne they still about, and change in restlesse wise.

As for her tenants ; that is, man and beafts,
The beafts we daily see massacred dy,
As thralls and vassalls vnto mens beheafts : 170
And men themselues doe change continually,
From youth to eld, from wealth to pouerty, 171
From good to bad, from bad to worst of all.
Ne doe their bodies only flit and fly :
But eeke their minds (which they immortall call)
Still change and vary thoughts, as new occasions fall.

Ne is the water in more constant case ;
Whether those same on high, or these belowe.
For, th'Ocean moueth stil, from place to place ;
And euery Riuer still doth ebbe and flowe : 180
Ne any Lake, that seems most still and flowe,
Ne Poole so small, that can his smoothnesse holde,
When any winde doth vnder heauen blowe ;
With which, the clouds are also toft and roll'd ;
Now like great Hills ; &, streight, like fluces, them vnfold.

So likewise are all watry liuing wights
Still toft, and turned, with continuall change
Neuer abyding in their stedfast plights. 181
The fish, still floting, doe at randon range,
And neuer rest ; but euermore exchange 190
Their dwelling places, as the streames them carrie :
Ne haue the watry foules a certaine grange,

Wherein to rest, ne in one stead do tarry ;
But flitting still doe flie, and still their places vary.

Next is the Ayre : which who feesles not by fense
(For, of all fense it is the middle meane)
To flit still ? and, with subtill influence
Of his thin spirit, all creatures to maintaine,
In state of life ? O weake life ! that does leane
On thing so tickle as th'vnsteady ayre ; 200
Which euery howre is chang'd, and altdred cleane
With euery blast that bloweth fowle or faire :
The faire doth it prolong ; the fowle doth it impaire.

Therein the changes infinite beholde,
Which to her creatures euery minute chaunce ;
Now, boyling hot : streight, friezing deadly cold :
Now, faire sun-shine, that makes all skip and daunce :
Streight, bitter storms and balefull countenance,
That makes them all to shiuer and to shake : 209
Rayne, hayle, and snowe do pay them sad penance,
And dreadfull thunder-claps (that make them quake)
With flames & flashing lights that thousand changes
make.

Last is the fire : which, though it liue for euer,
Ne can be quenched quite ; yet, euery day,
Wee see his parts, so soone as they do seuer,
To lose their heat, and shortly to decay ;
So, makes himself his owne consuming pray.
Ne any liuing creatures doth he breed :
But all, that are of others bredd, doth slay ;
And, with their death, his cruell life dooth feed ; 220
Nought leauing, but their barren ashes, without feede.

Thus, all these fower (the which the ground-work bee
Of all the world, and of all liuing wights)
To thousand sorts of *Change* we subiect see :
Yet are they chang'd (by other wondrous flights)
Into themselves, and lose their natie mights ;
The Fire to Aire, and th'Ayre to Water sheere,
And Water into Earth : yet Water fights
With Fire, and Aire with Earth approaching neere :
Yet all are in one body, and as one appeare. 230

So, in them all raignes *Mutabilitie* ;
How-euer these, that Gods themselves do call,
Of them doe claime the rule and fouerainty :
As, *Vesta*, of the fire æthereall ;
Vulcan, of this, with vs so vsuall ;
Ops, of the earth ; and *Iuno* of the Ayre ;
Neptune, of Seas ; and Nymphes, of Riuers all.
For, all those Riuers to me subiect are :
And all the rest, which they vsurp, be all my share.

Which to approuen true, as I haue told, 240
Vouchsafe, ô goddesse, to thy presence call
The rest which doe the world in being hold :
As, times and seasons of the yeare that fall :
Of all the which, demand in generall,
Or iudge thy selfe, by verdict of thine eye,
Whether to me they are not subiect all.
Nature did yeeld thereto ; and by-and-by,
Bade *Order* call them all, before her Maiesty.

So, / forth issfew'd the Seasons of the yeare ;
First, lusty *Spring*, all dight in leaues of flowres 250

That freshly budded and new bloofmes did beare
 (In which a thousand birds had built their bowres
 That sweetly fung, to call forth Paramours):
 And in his hand a iauelin he did beare,
 And on his head (as fit for warlike stoures)
 A guilt engrauen morion he did weare;
 That as some did him loue, so others did him feare.

Then came the iolly *Sommer*, being dight
 In a thin filken cassock coloured greene,
 That was vnlyned all, to be more light : 260
 And on his head a girlond well befeene
 He wore, from which as he had chauffed been
 The sweat did drop; and in his hand he bore
 A boawe and shaftes, as he in forrest greene
 Had hunted late the Libbard or the Bore,
 And now would bathe his limbes, with labor heated fore.

Then came the *Autumne* all in yellow clad,
 As though he ioyed in his plentious store,
 Laden with fruits that made him laugh, full glad
 That he had banisht hunger, which to-fore 270
 Had by the belly oft him pinched fore.
 Vpon his head a wreath that was enrold
 With eares of corne, of euery sort he bore:
 And in his hand a fickle he did holde,
 To reape the ripened fruits the which the earth had yold.

Lastly, came *Winter* cloathed all in frize,
 Chattering his teeth for cold that did him chill,
 Whil't on his hoary beard his breath did freefe;
 And the dull drops that from his purpled bill

As from a limbeck did adown distill. 280
In his right hand a tipped staffe he held,
With which his feeble steps he stayed still :
For, he was faint with cold, and weak with eld ;
That scarfe his loosed limbes he hable was to weld.

These, marching softly, thus in order went,
And after them, the Monthes all riding came ;
First, sturdy *March* with brows full sternly bent,
And armed strongly, rode vpon a Ram,
The same which ouer *Hellefpontus* swam :
Yet in his hand a spade he also hent, 290
And in a bag all sorts of seeds yfame,
Which on the earth he strowed as he went,
And fild her womb with fruitfull hope of nourishment.

Next came fresh *Aprill* full of lustyhed,
And wanton as a Kid whose horne new buds :
Vpon a Bull he rode, the same which led
Europa floting through th'*Argolick* fluds :
His hornes were gilden all with golden studs
And garnished with garlonds goodly dight
Of all the fairest flowres and freshest buds (fight
Which th'earth brings forth, and wet he seem'd in
With waues, through which he waded for his loues
delight.

Then came faire *May*, the fayrest mayd on ground, 302
Deckt all with dainties of her seasons pryde,
And throwing flowres out of her lap around :
Vpon two brethrens shoulders she did ride,
The twinnes of *Leda* ; which on eyther side
Supported her like to their soueraine Queene.

Lord ! how all creatures laught, when her they spide,
 And leapt and daunc't as they had rauisht beene !
 And *Cupid* selfe about her fluttred all in greene. 311

And after her, came iolly *June*, arrayd
 All in greene leaues, as he a Player were ;
 Yet in his time, he wrought as well as playd,
 That by his plough-yrons mote right well appeare :
 Vpon a Crab he rode, that him did beare
 With crooked crawling steps an vncouth pafe,
 And backward yode, as Bargemen wont to fare .
 Bending their force contrary to their face,
 Like that vngracious crew which faines demurest grace.

Then came hot *Iuly* boyling like to fire, 321
 That all his garments he had cast away :
 Vpon a Lyon raging yet with ire
 He boldly rode and made him to obey :
 It was the beaft that whylome did forray
 The Nemæan Forrest, till th'*Amphytrionide*
 Him slew, and with his hide did him array :
 Behinde his back a fithe, and by his fide
 Vnder his belt he bore a fickle circling wide.

The fixt was *August*, being rich arrayd 330
 In garment all of gold downe to the ground :
 Yet rode he not, but led a louely Mayd
 Forth by the lilly hand, the which was cround
 With eares of corne, and full her hand was found ;
 That was the righteous Virgin, which of old
 Liv'd here on earth, and plenty made abound ;
 But, after Wrong was lov'd and Iustice folde,
 She left th'vnrighteous world and was to heauen extold.

Next him, *September* marched eeke on footc ;
 Yet was he heauy laden with the spoyle 340
 Of haruefts riches, which he made his boot,
 And him enricht with bounty of the soyle :
 In his one hand, as fit for haruefts toyle,
 He held a knife-hook ; and in th'other hand
 A paire of waights, with which he did affoyle
 Both more and lesse, where it in doubt did stand,
 And equall gaue to each as Iustice duly scann'd.

Then came *October* full of merry glee :
 For, yet his noule was totty of the must,
 Which he was treading in the wine-fats see, 350
 And of the ioyous oyle, whose gentle gust
 Made him to frolick and so full of lust :
 Vpon a dreadfull Scorpion he did ride,
 The same which by *Dianaes* doom vniust
 Slew great *Orion* : and eeke by his side
 He had his ploughing share, and coulter ready tyde.

Next / was *November*, he full grosse and fat,
 As fed with lard, and that right well might seeme ;
 For, he had been a fattening hogs of late,
 That yet his browes with sweat, did reek and steem,
 And yet the seafon was full sharp and breem ; 361
 In planting eeke he took no small delight :
 Whereon he rode, not easie was to deeme ;
 For it a dreadfull *Centaure* was in fight,
 The feed of *Saturne*, and faire *Nais*, *Chiron* hight.

And after him, came next the chill *December* :
 Yet he through merry feasting which he made,

1. 357, 'full' inadvertently doubled in 1609.

And great bonfires, did not the cold remember ;
 His Sauours birth his mind so much did glad :
 Vpon a shaggy-bearded Goat he rode, 370
 The same wherewith *Dan Ioue* in tender yeares,
 They say, was nourisht by th'*I[d]ean* mayd ;
 And in his hand a broad deepe boawle he beares ;
 Of which, he freely drinks an health to all his peeres.

Then came old *January*, wrapped well
 In many weeds to keep the cold away ;
 Yet did he quake and quiuer like to quell,
 And blowe his nayles to warme them if he may :
 For, they were numbd with holding all the day
 An hatchet keene, with which he felled wood, 380
 And from the trees did lop the needlesse spray :
 Vpon an huge great Earth-pot steane he stood ;
 From whose wide mouth, there flowed forth the Romane
 flood.

And lastly, came cold *February*, fitting
 In an old wagon, for he could not ride ;
 Drawne of two fishes for the season fitting,
 Which through the flood before did softly flyde
 And swim away : yet had he by his side
 His plough and harnesse fit to till the ground,
 And tooles to prune the trees, before the pride 390
 Of haasting Prime did make them burgein round :
 So past the twelue Months forth, & their dew places
 found.

l. 370, '*rode*'—another of Spenser's neglects, to the distress of all Purists, who of course read '*rade*' : l. 372, —the dropped '*d*' of 1609, 1611, first supplied by Upton.

And after these, there came the *Day*, and *Night*,
Riding together both with equall pafe,
Th'one on a Palfrey blacke, the other white ;
But *Night* had couered her vncomely face
With a blacke veile, and held in hand a mace,
On top whereof the moon and stars were pight,
And sleep and darknesse round about did trace :
But *Day* did beare, vpon his scepters hight, 400
The goodly Sun, encompassed all with beames bright.

Then came the *Howres*, faire daughters of high *Ioue*,
And timely *Night*, the which were all endewed
With wondrous beauty fit to kindle loue ;
But they were Virgins all, and loue eschewed,
That might forslack the charge to them fore-shewed
By mighty *Ioue* ; who did them Porters make
Of heauens gate (whence all the gods issued)
Which they did dayly watch, and nightly wake
By euen turnes, ne euer did their charge forsake. 410

And after all came *Life*, and lastly *Death* ;
Death with most grim and grieufully visage seene,
Yet is he nought but parting of the breath ;
Ne ought to see, but like a shade to weene,
Vnbodied, vnfoul'd, vnheard, vnseene.
But *Life* was like a faire young lusty boy,
Such as they faine *Dan Cupid* to haue beene,
Full of delightfull health and liuely ioy.
Deckt all with flowres, and wings of gold fit to employ.

When these were past, thus gan the *Titanesse* ; 420
Lo, mighty mother, now be iudge and say,

Whether in all thy creatures more or lesse
CHANGE doth not raig'n & beare the greatest sway:
 For, who sees not, that *Time* on all doth pray?
 But *Times* do change and moue continually.
 So nothing here long standeth in one stay:
 Wherefore, this lower world who can deny
 But to be subiect still to *Mutabilitie*?

Then thus gan *Ioue*; Right true it is, that these
 And all things else that vnder heauen dwell 430
 Are chang'd of *Time*, who doth them all disceise
 Of being: But, who is it (to me tell)
 That *Time* himselfe doth moue and still compell
 To keepe his course? Is not that namely wee
 Which poure that vertue from our heauenly cell,
 That moues them all, and makes them changed be?
 So them we gods doe rule, and in them also thee.

To whom, thus *Mutability*: The things
 Which we see not how they are mov'd and fwayd,
 Ye may attribute to your selues as Kings, 440
 And say they by your secret powre are made:
 But what we see not, who shall vs perswade?
 But were they so, as ye them faine to be,
 Mov'd by your might, and ordred by your ayde;
 Yet what if I can proue, that euen yee
 Your selues are likewise chang'd, and subiect vnto mee?

And first, concerning her that is the first,
 Euen you faire *Cynthia*, whom so much ye make
Ioues dearest darling, she was bred and nurst
 On *Cynthus* hill, whence she her name did take: 450
 Then is she mortall borne, how-so ye crake;

Befides, her face and countenance euery day
We changed see, and fundry forms partake,
Now hornd, now rōūd, now bright, now brown & gray:
So that *as changefull as the Moone* men vse to say.

Next, *Mercury*, who though he lesse appeare
To change his hew, and alwayes seeme as one ;
Yet, he his course doth altar euery yeare,
And is of late far out of order gone :
So *Venus* eeke, that goodly Paragone, 460
Though faire all night, yet is she darke all day ;
And *Phæbus* self, who lightsome is alone,
Yet is he oft eclipsed by the way,
And fills the darkned world with terror and difmay.

Now / *Mars* that valiant man is changed most :
For, he some times so far runs out of square,
That he his way doth seem quite to haue lost,
And cleane without his vsuall sphere to fare ;
That euen these Star-gazers stonisht are
At sight thereof, and damne their lying bookes : 470
So likewise, grim Sir *Saturne* oft doth spare
His sterne aspect, and calme his crabbed lookes :
So many turning cranks these haue, so many crookes.

But you *Dan Ioue*, that only constant are,
And King of all the rest, as ye do clame,
Are you not subiect eeke to this misfare ?
Then let me aske you this withouten blame,
Where were ye borne ? some say in *Crete* by name,
Others in *Thebes*, and others other-where ;
But wheresoeuer they comment the same, 480

They all consent that ye begotten were,
And borne here in this world, ne other can appeare.

Then are ye mortall borne, and thrall to me,
Vnlesse the kingdome of the sky yee make
Immortall, and vnchangeable to be ;
Befides, that power and vertue which ye spake,
That ye here worke, doth many changes take,
And your owne natures change : for, each of you
That vertue haue, or this, or that to make,
Is checkt and changed from his nature trew, 45
By others opposition or obliquid view.

Befides, the fundry motions of your Spheares,
So fundry waies and fashions as clerkes faine,
Some in short space, and some in longer yeares ;
What is the same but alteration plaine ?
Onely the starrie skie doth still remaine :
Yet do the Starres and Signes therein still moue,
And euen it self is mov'd, as wizards faine.
But all that moueth, doth mutation loue :
Therefore both you and them to me I subiect proue.

Then since within this wide great *Vniuerse* 50
Nothing doth firme and permanent appeare,
But all things toft and turned by transuerse :
What then should let, but I aloft should reare
My Trophee, and from all, the triumph beare ?
Now iudge then (ô thou greatest goddesse trew !)
According as thy selfe doest see and heare,
And vnto me addoom that is my dew ;
That is the rule of all, all being rul'd by you.

l. 498, '*faine*' 1611—blunderingly. See Glossary, s.v.

So hauing ended, silence long enfewed, 510
Ne *Nature* to or fro spake for a space,
But with firme eyes affixt, the ground still viewed.
Meane while, all creatures, looking in her face,
Expecting th'end of this so doubtfull case,
Did hang in long suspence what would enfew,
To whether side should fall the soueraigne place :
At length, she looking vp with chearefull view,
The silence brake, and gaue her doome in speeches few.

I well confider all that ye haue sayd,
And find that all things stedfastnes doe hate 520
And changed be : yet being rightly wayd
They are not changed from their first estate ;
But by their change their being doe dilate :
And turning to themselues at length againe,
Doe worke their owne perfection so by fate :
Then ouer them Change doth not rule and raigne ;
But they raigne ouer change, and doe their states maintaine.

Cease therefore daughter further to aspire,
And thee content thus to be rul'd by me :
For thy decay thou seekst by thy desire ; 530
But time shall come that all shall changed bee,
And from thenceforth, none no more change shall see.
So was the *Titans* put downe and whist,
And *Ioue* confirm'd in his imperiall fee.
Then was that whole assembly quite dismist,
And *Natur's* selfe did vanish, whither no man wist.

The VIII. Canto, vnperfite.

WHen I bethinke me on that speech whyleare,
 Of *Mutability*, and well it way :
 Me feemes, that though she all vnworthy were
 Of the Heav'ns Rule ; yet very sooth to say,
 In all things else she beares the greatest fway,
 Which makes me loath this state of life so tickle,
 And loue of things so vaine to cast away ;
 Whose flowring pride, so fading and so fickle,
 Short *Time* shall soon cut down with his consuming fickle.

Then gin I thinke on that which Nature sayd, 10
 Of that same time when no more *Change* shall be,
 But stedfast rest of all things firmly stayd
 Vpon the pillours of Eternity,
 That is contrayr to *Mutabilitie* :
 For, all that moueth, doth in *Change* delight :
 But thence-forth all shall rest eternally
 With Him that is the God of Sabbaoth hight :
 O Thou great Sabbaoth God, graunt me that Sabaoths
 fight. 18

FINIS.

l. 7, '*and cast*' 1611 (bad) : l. 17, '*Sabaoth*' (1611) : l. 18, '*that*' (first) — Dr. Morris annotates here "For that Mr. Collier suggests *thou*. But there should perhaps be no comma after *God*, and the sentence will be an optative one, signifying 'O *may* that great God of hosts grant me the enjoyment of that rest eternal.' Perhaps '*Sabaoths fight*' is an allusion to the ancient interpretation of the word Jerusalem—i.e. *Visio pacis*." Spite of this, '*Thou*' seems certainly the Author's intended word, and so I adopt it. Church suggested '*Sabbaths*'; 1611 spells '*Sabaoth*.' See Glossary s.v. : l. 20—on verso of last page of 1609 is the wood-cut symbol of the Publisher Lownes or of the Printer or H. L., with the legend '*Os Homini Sublime Dedit*,' and below '*At London, Printed by H. L. for Mathew Lownes*.'—G.



LETTER TO SIR WALTER RALEIGH,
KNT.,

COMMENDATORY POEMS,

AND

SONNETS TO PERSONS OF RANK.

1590-96.

NOTE.

As stated in the Note before the 'Faerie Queene' (Vol. V., page 4) the Letter to Raleigh and the related poems, have been *pre*-fixed by modern Editors (including Dr. RICHARD MORRIS), whereas in both of the Author's own editions (of 1590 and 1596) they were *affixed* (in the former pp. 591—606, and 4 unpagd leaves, in the latter pp. 589—605), at close of Vol. I. (Books I.—III.).

In the 1596 quarto there is considerable blundering : *e.g.*,—

1. Six sonnets are wholly left out—viz., to (a) Burleigh, (b) Hunsdon, (c) Buckhurst, (d) Walsingham, (e) Norris, (f) Countess of Pembroke.
2. The following—(a) 'Vision upon the Concept of the Faery Queene,' (b) 'Another of the Same' (c) 'To the learned Shepheard'—are printed twice over. Curiously enough, in 1590, the Sonnets to (a) Hatton, (b) Oxenford, (c) Northumberland, (d) Essex, (e) Ormond, (f) Howell, (g), Grey of Wilton, (h) Raleigh, are also printed twice over—viz., first in the paged leaves, and second in the unpagd.
3. Owing to (2), the opening commendatory poems are severed from the others by the Letter to Raleigh.

All this I have necessarily put right : *id est*, I restore the Letter to its first place, and insert the six omitted Sonnets in their places. Except in the Commendatory Poems there are no various readings as between 1596 (our text) and 1590. In these I note the few slight changes in spelling and punctuation. In the 'Letter to Raleigh' there are only two differing readings, if readings they may be called : viz., (1) 'knight' misprinted for 'knightes' (page 317, l. 29). and (2) 'Historicall' for 'historical' (page 318, l. 7). All the rest is *literatim* in '96 as in '90.—G.



Letter of the Authors expounding his
whole intention in the course of this worke, which
for that it giueth great light to the Reader, for
the better vnderstanding is hereunto
annexed.

To the Right noble, and Valorous, Sir Walter
Raleigh knight, Lo. Wardein of the Stanneryes,
and her Maiesties lieftenaunt of the County of
Cornewayll.



Ir knowing how doubtfully all Alle- 10
gories may be construed, and this booke
of mine, which I have entituled the
Faery Queene, being a continued Alle-
gory, or darke conceit, I haue thought
good aswell for auoyding of gealous
opinions and miscōstructions, as also
for your better light in reading thereof, (being so by you
comanded) to discouer vnto you the general intention and
meaning, which in the whole course thereof I haue fash-
ioned, without expressing of any particular purposes or by 20
accidents therein occasioned. The generall end therefore
of all the booke is to fashion a gentleman or noble person
in vertuous and gentle discipline: Which for that I
conceiued shoulde be most plausible and pleasing, being

coloured with an historicall fiction, the which the most part of men delight to read, rather for variety of matter, then for profite of the ensample : I chose the historye of king Arthure, as most fitte for the excellency of his person being made famous by many mens former | workes, and also furthest from the daunger of enuy, and suspition of 3 present time. In which I haue followed all the antique Poets historicall, first Homere, who in the Persons of Agamemnon and Vlysses hath ensampled a good gouernour and a vertuous man, the one in his Ilias, the other in his Odysses : then Virgil, whose like intention was to doe in the person of Aeneas : after him Ariosto comprised them both in his Orlando : and lately Tasso disseuered them againe, and formed both parts in two persons, namely that part which they in Philosophy call Ethice, or vertues of a priuate man, coloured in his Rinaldo. The 4 other named Politice in his Godfredo. By ensample of which excellent Poets, I labour to pourtraict in Arthure, before he was king, the image of a braue knight, perfected in the twelue priuate morall vertues, as Aristotle hath deuised, the which is the purpose of these first twelue bookes : which if I finde to be well accepted, I may be perhaps encouraged, to frame the other part of politticke vertues in his person, after that hee came to be king. To 5 some I know this Methode will seeme displeasaunt, which had rather haue good discipline deliuered plainly in way of precepts, or sermoned at large, as they vse, then thus cloudily enwrapped in Allegoricall deuises. But such, me seeme, should be satisfide with the vse of these dayes, seeing all things accounted by their showes, and nothing esteemed of, that is not delightful and pleasing to commune sence. For this cause is Xenophon preferred before Plato, for that

*the one in the exquisite depth of his iudgement, formed a
 Commune welth such as it should be, but the other in the
 person of Cyrus and the Persians fashioned a gouerne-
 ment such as it might best be: So much more profitable 60
 and gracious is doctrine by ensample, then by rule. So
 haue I laboured to doe in the person of Arthure: whom I
 conceiue after his long education by Timon, to whom he
 was by Merlin deliuered to be brought vp, so soone as he
 was borne of the Lady Igrayne, to haue seene in a dream
 or vision the Faery Queen, with | whose excellent beauty
 rauished, he awaking resolved to seeke her out, and so
 being by Merlin armed, and by Timon thoroughly in-
 struēted, he went to seeke her forth in Faerye land. In
 that Faery Queene I meane glory in my generall intention, 70
 but in my particular I conceiue the most excellent and
 glorious person of our soueraine the Queene, and her king-
 dome in Faery land. And yet in some places els I doe
 otherwise shadow her. For considering she beareth two
 persons, the one of a most royall Queene or Empreſse, the
 other of a most vertuous and beautifull Lady, this latter
 part in some places I doe expresse in Belphebe, fashioning
 her name according to your owne excellent conceipt of
 Cynthia (Phæbe and Cynthia being both names of Diana).
 So in the person of Prince Arthure I sette forth magnifi- 80
 cence in particular, which vertue for that (according to
 Aristotle and the rest) it is the perfection of all the rest,
 and containeth in it them all, therefore in the whole course
 I mention the deedes of Arthure applyable to that vertue,
 which I write of in that booke. But of the xii. other
 vertues, I make xii. other knights the patrons, for the
 more variety of the history. Of which these three bookes
 containe three. The first of the knight of the Redcrosse,*

in whome I expresse Holynes. The seconde of Sir Guyon, in whome I sette forth Temperaunce: The third of Britomartis a Lady knight, in whome I picture Chastity. But because the beginning of the whole worke seemeth abrupte and as depending vpon other antecedents, it needs that ye know the occasion of these three knights seuerall aduentures. For the Methode of a Poet historicall is not such, as of an Historiographer. For an Historiographer discourseth of affayres orderly as they were donne, accounting as well the times as the actions, but a Poet thrusteth into the middest, euen where it most concerneth him, and there recourfing to the thinges forepasse, and diuining of thinges to come, maketh a pleasing Analysis of all. The beginning therefore of my history, if it were to be told by an Historiographer | should be the twelfth booke, which is the last, where I deuise that the Faery Queene kept her Annuall feast xii. dayes, vpon which xii. seuerall dayes, the occasions of the xii. seuerall aduentures, hapned, which being vndertaken by xii. seuerall knights, are in these xii. books seuerally handled and discoursed. The first was this. In the beginning of the feast, there presented himsele a tall clownish younge man, who falling before the Queen of Faries desired a boone (as the manner then was) which during that feast she might not refuse: which was that hee might haue the atchieuement of any aduenture, which during that feast should happen: that being graunted, he rested him on the floore, vnfitte through his rusticity for a better place. Soone after entred a faire Ladye in mourning weedes, riding on a white Asse, with a dwarfe behind her leading a warlike steed, that bore the Armes of a knight, and his speare in the dwarfes hand. Shee falling before

the Queene of Faeries, complayned that her father and mother an ancient King and Queene, had bene by an huge dragon many years shut up in a brasen Castle, who thence suffred them not to yssew: and therefore besought the Faery Queene to assygne her some one of her knights to take on him that exployt. Presently that clownish person vpslarting, desired that aduenture: whereat the Queene much wondering, and the Lady much gaine saying, yet he earnestly importuned his desire. In the end the Lady told him that vnlesse that armour which she brought, would serue him (that is the armour of a Christian man specified by Saint Paul v. Ephes.) that he could not succeed in that enterprife, which being forthwith put vpon him with dewe furnitures thereunto, he seemed the goodliest man in al that company, and was well liked of the Lady. And estefoones taking on him knighthood, and mounting on that straunge Courser, he went forth with her on that aduenture: where beginneth the first booke, vz.:

A gentle knight was pricking on the playne, &c.

The | second day ther came in a Palmer bearing an Infant with bloody hands, whose Parents he complained to haue bene slayn by an Enchaunteresse called Acrasia: and therfore craued of the Faery Queene, to appoint him some knight, to performe that aduenture, which being assigned to Sir Guyon, he presently went forth with that same Palmer: which is the beginning of the second booke and the whole subiect thereof. The third day there came in a Groome, who complained before the Faery Queene, that a vile Enchaunter called Bufirane had in hand a most faire Lady called Amoretta, whom he kept in most grievous torment, because she would not yield him the

pleasure of her body. Whereupon Sir Scudamour the lover of that Lady presently tooke on him that aduventure. But being unable to performe it by reason of the hard Enchauntments, after long sorrow, in the end he met with Britomartis who succoured him, and reskewed his loue.

But by occasion hereof, many other aduventures are intermedled, but rather as Accidents, then intendments. As the loue of Britomart, the ouerthrow of Marinell, the misery of Florimell, the vertuosnes of Belphebe, the lasciuiousnes of Hellenora, and many the like.

Thus much Sir, I haue briefly ouerronne to direct your vnderstanding to the wel-head of the History, that from thence gathering the whole intention of the conceit, ye may as in a handfull gripe al the discourse, which otherwise may happily sceme tedious and confused. So humbly crauing the continuance of your honorable fauour towards me, and th'eternall establishment of your happines, I humbly take leaue.

23 January, 1589.

Yours most humbly affectionate

Ed. Spenser.

A / Vifion vpon this concept of the
Faery Queene.

MEthought I saw the graue where *Laura* lay
Within that Temple, where the vestall flame
Was wont to burne, and passing by that way,
To see that buried dust of liuing fame,
Whose tombe faire loue, and fairer vertue kept,
All suddenly I saw the Faery Queene :
At whose approach the soule of *Petrarke* wept,
And from thenceforth those graces were not seene. 10
For they this Queene attended, in whose steed
Obliuion laid him downe on *Lauras* herse :
Hereat the hardest stones were seene to bleed,
And grones of buried ghostes the heauens did perfe.
Where *Homers* spright did tremble all for grieve,
And curst th'accesse of that celestiall theife.

Another of the same.

THe prayse of meaner wits this worke like profit brings,
As doth the Cuckoes song delight when *Philumena*
sings.
If thou hast formed right true vertues face herein : 20
Vertue her selfe can best discerne, to whom they written bin.

l. 3, , after 'grauē' and after 'lay,' and so in 2nd copy of '96: l. 7,
'tumble': l. 8, 'suddenly': l. 14, & 'heuens': l. 19, 'whē.'

*If thou hast beautie prayd, let her sole lookes diuine
 Iudge if ought therein be amis, and end it by her me:
 If Chastitie want ought, or Temperance her dew, (a
 Behold her Princely mind aright, and write thy Qu
 Meane while she shall perceiue, how farre her vertues
 About the reach of all that liue, or such as wrote of y
 And thereby will excuse and fauour thy good will :
 Whose vertue can not be exprest, but by an Angels qu
 Of me no lines are lou'd, nor letters are of price,
 Of all which speake our English tongue, but thos
 thy deuice.*

W. R.

To the learned Shepheard.

*C*ollyn I see by thy new taken taske,
 some sacred fury hath enricht thy braynes,
 That leades thy muse in hautie verse to maske,
 and loath the layes that longs to lowly swaynes.
 That lifts thy notes from Shepheardes vnto kings
 So like the liuely Larke that mounting sings.

*Thy louely Rosolinde seemes now forlorne,
 and all thy gentle flockes forgotten quight,
 Thy chaunged hart now holdes thy pypes in scorne,
 those pretty pypes that did thy mates delight.
 Those trustie mates that loued thee so well,
 VVhom thou gau'st mirth : as they gaue thee the bel*

l. 22, 'beauty': l. 26, 'far': l. 33, 'Shepheard': l. 36, 'hang'
 l. 38, 'kings': l. 39, 'singes': l. 44, 'trusty.'

*Yet as thou earst with thy sweet roundelays,
 didst stirre to glee our laddes in homely bowers :
 So moughtst thou now in these refyned layes,
 delight the dainty eares of higher powers.
 And so mought they in their deepe skanning skill 50
 Alow and grace our Collyns flowing quill.*

*And fare befall that Faerie Queene of thine,
 In whose faire eyes loue linckt with vertue sits :
 Enfusing by those bewties fiers deuine,
 Such high conceites into thy humble wits,
 As raised hath poore pastors oaten reede,
 From rusticke tunes, to chaunt heroique deedes.*

*So mought thy Redcrosse knight with happy hand
 victorious be in that faire Ilands right :
 Which thou doest vaile in Type of Faery land 60
 Elyzaes blessed field, that Albion hight.
 That shielde her friends, and warres her mightie foes,
 Yet still with people, peace, and plentie flowes.*

*But (iolly Shepheard) though with pleasing style,
 thou feast the humour of the Courtly traine :
 Let not conceipt thy settled sence beguile,
 Ne daunted be through enuy or disdaine.
 Subiect thy dome to her Empyring spright,
 From whence thy Muse, and all the world takes light.*

Hobynoll. /

70

l. 46, 'sweete': l. 49, 'daintie': l. 51, 'quyll': l. 52, 'Faery': l. 53, 'fittes': l. 54, 'fyers deuyn': l. 55, 'such . . . wittes': l. 57, 'rustick': l. 60, 'vaile': l. 61, 'Elizas': l. 62, 'friendes': l. 64, 'shepheard': l. 65, 'trayne.'

Fayre *Thamis* streame, that from *Ludds* stately towne
 Runst paying tribute to the Ocean seas,
 Let all thy Nymphes and Syrens of renowne
 Be silent, while this Bryttane *Orpheus* playes :
 Nere thy sweet bankes, there liues that sacred crowne,
 Whose hand strowes Palme and neuer-dying bayes.
 Let all at once with thy soft murmuring sowne
 Present her with this worthy Poets prayes.
 For he hath taught hye drifts in Shepherdes weedes,
 And deepe conceites now singes in *Faeries* deedes.

R. S.

Graue *Muses* march in triumph and with prayes,
 Our Goddesse here hath giuen you leaue to land :
 And biddes this rare distenser of your graces
 Bow downe his brow vnto her sacred hand.
 Desertes findes dew in that most princely doome,
 In whose sweete brest are all the *Muses* bredde :
 So did that great Augustus erst in Roome
 With leaues of fame adorne his Poets hedde.
 Faire be the guerdon of your Faery Queene,
 Euen of the fairest that the world hath seene.

H. B. /

When stout *Achilles* heard of *Helen's* rape
 And what reuenge the States of Greece deuise
 Thinking by sleight the fatall warres to scape,
 In womans weedes himselfe he then disguise.
 But this deuise *Vlysses* soone did spy,
 And brought him forth, the chaunce of warre to try.

When *Spencer* saw the fame was spread so large
Through Faery land of their renowned Queene :
Loth that his Muse should take so great a charge,
As in such haughty matter to be seene,
To seeme a Shepeheard then he made his choice,
But *Sidney* heard him sing, and knew his voice.

And as *Vlysses* brought faire *Thetis* sonne
From his retyred life to menage armes :
So *Spencer* was by *Sidneys* speeches wonne,
To blaze her fame not fearing future harmes :
For well he knew, his Muse would soone be tyred
In her high praise, that all the world admired.

Yet as *Achilles* in those warlike frays,
Did win the palme from all the *Grecian* Peeres :
So *Spencer* now to his immortall prayse,
Hath wonne the Laurell quite from all his feres.
What though his taske exceed a humane witt
He is excus'd, sith *Sidney* thought it fitt.

W. L.

TO | looke vpon a worke of rare deuise
The which a workman setteth out to view,
And not to yield it the deserued prise,
That vnto such a workmanship is dew,
Doth either proue the iudgement to be naught
Or els doth shew a mind with enuy fraught.

To labour to commend a peece of worke,
Which no man goes about to discommend,

*Would raise a iealous doubt that there did lurke
Some secret doubt, whereto the prayse did tend.
For when men know the goodnes of the wyne,
Tis needlesse for the hoast to haue a sygne.*

*Thus then to shew my iudgement to be such
As can discern of colours blacke, and white,
As alls to free my minde from enuies tuch,
That neuer giues to any man his right,
I here pronounce this workmanship is such,
As that no pen can set it forth too much.*

*And thus I hang a garland at the dore,
Not for to shew the goodnes of the ware :
But such hath beene the custome heretofore,
And customes very hardly broken are.
And when your tast shall tell you this is trew,
Then looke you giue your hoast his vtmost dew.
Ignoto.*

*To the right honourable Sir Christopher Hatton, Lord High Chauncelor
of England. &c.*

THose prudent heads, that with their counsels
Whylom the Pillours of th'earth did sustain
And taught ambitious *Rome* to tyrannise,
And in the neck of all the world to rayne,
Oft from those graue affaires were wont abstaine,

With the sweet Lady Muses for to play :
 So *Ennius* the elder Africane
 So *Maro* oft did *Cæsars* cares allay.
 So you great Lord, that with your counsell sway
 The burdeine of this kingdom mightily,
 With like delightes sometimes may eke delay,
 The rugged brow of carefull Policy :
 And to these ydle rymes lend little space,
 Which for their titles sake may find more grace.

To the most honourable and excellent

*Lo. the Earle of Essex. Great Maister of the
 Horſe to her Highneſſe, and knight of the
 Noble order of the Garter. &c.*

M Agnificke Lord, whose vertues excellent
 Doe merit a most famous Poets witt,
 To be thy living praises instrument,
 Yet doe not sdeigne, to let thy name be writt
 In this base Poeme, for thee far vnfitt.
 Nought is thy worth disparaged thereby,
 But when my Muse, whose fethers nothing flitt
 Doe yet but flagg, and lowly learne to fly
 With bolder wing shall dare alofte to fly
 To the last praises of this Faery Queene,
 Then shall it make more famous memory
 Of thine Heroicke parts, such as they beene :
 Till then vouchsafe thy noble countenaunce,
 To these first labours needed furtheraunce. |

*To the right Honourable the Earle
of Oxford, Lord high Chamberlayne of
England. &c.*

REceiue most Noble Lord in gentle gree,
The vnripe fruit of an vnreadie wit :
Which by thy countenaunce doth craue to bee
Defended from foule Enuies poisonous bit.
Which so to doe may thee right well besit,
Sith th'antique glory of thine auncestry
Vnder a shady vele is therein writ,
And eke thine owne long liuing memory,
Succeeding them in true nobility :
And also for the loue, which thou doest beare
To th' *Heliconian* ymps, and they to thee,
They vnto thee, and thou to them most deare :
Deare as thou art unto thy selfe, so loue
That loues & honours thee, as doth behoue.

*To the right honourable the Earle of
Northumberland.*

THe sacred *Muses* haue made alwaies clame
To be the *Nourfes* of nobility,
And *Registres* of euerlasting fame
To all that armes professe and cheualry.
Then by like right the noble *Progeny*,

*Which them succeed in fame and worth, are tyde
T'embrace the service of sweete Poetry,
By whose endeouours they are glorifide,
And eke from all, of whom it is enuide,
To patronize the authour of their praise,
Which giues them life, that els would soone haue didē,
And crownes their ashes with immortall baies.
To thee therefore right noble Lord I send
This present of my paines, it to defend. |*

To the right Honourable the Earle of
Ormond and Ossory.

REceiue most noble Lord a simple taste
Of the wilde fruit, which saluage soyl hath bred,
Which being through long wars left almost waste,
With brutish barbarisme is ouerspredd :
And in so faire a land, as may be redd,
Not one *Parnassus*, nor one *Helicone*
Left for sweete Muses to be harboured,
But where thy selfe hast thy braue mansione :
There in deede dwel faire Graces many one.
And gentle Nymphes, delights of learned wits ;
And in thy person without Paragone
All goodly bountie and true honour fits,
Such therefore, as that wasted soyl doth yield,
Receiue dear Lord in worth, the fruit of barren field.

To the right honourable the Lo. Ch.

*Howard, Lo. high Admiral of England, knight of
the noble order of the Garter, and one of
her Maiesties priuie Counfel. &c.*

A Nd ye, braue Lord, whose goodly personage,
And noble deeds each other garnishing,
Make you ensample to the present age,
Of th'old Heroes, whose famous ofspring
The antique Poets wont so much to sing,
In this same Pageaunt haue a worthy place,
Sith those huge castles of Castilian king,
That vainly threatned kingdoms to displace,
Like flying doues ye did before you chace ;
And that proud people woxen insolent
Through many victories, didst first deface :
Thy praises euerlasting monument
Is in this verse engruen semblab[ly],
That it may liue to all posterity. |

To the most renowmed and valiant

*Lord, the Lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the
Noble order of the Garter, &c.*

M Ost Noble Lord the pillor of my life,
And Patrone of my Muses pupillage,
Through whose large bountie poured on me rife,
In the first season of my feeble age,

I now doe liue, bound yours by vassalage :
 Sith nothing euer may redeeme, nor reauē
 Out of your endlesse debt so sure a gage,
 Vouchsafe in worth this small giuft to receaue,
 Which in your noble hands for pledge I leaue,
 Of all the rest, that I am tyde t'account :
 Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did weaue
 In fauadage foyle, far from Parnasso mount,
 And roughly wrought in an vnlearned Looime :
 The which vouchsafe dear Lord your fauorable doome.

*To the right noble and valorous
 knight, Sir Walter Raleigh, Lo. Wardein of the
 Stanneryes, and lief[t]enaunt of Cornwaile.*

*TO thee that art the sommers Nightingale,
 Thy soueraine Goddesse most deare delight,
 Why doe I send this rustic Madrigale,
 That may thy tunefull eare vnseason quite ?
 Thou onely fit this Argument to write,
 In whose high thoughts Pleasure hath built her bowre,
 And dainty loue learnd sweetly to endite.
 My rimes I know vnsauory and sowre,
 To taste the streames, that like a golden showre
 Flow from thy fruitfull head, of thy loues praise,
 Fitter perhaps to thonder Martiall flowre,
 When so thee list thy lofty Muse to raise :
 Yet till that thou thy Poeme wilt make knowne,
 Let thy faire Cinthias praises bee thus rudely showne. |*

To the most vertuous, and beautifull
Lady, the Lady Carter.

NE may I without blot of enuſie blame,
 You faireſt Lady leave out of this place,
 But with remembrance of your gracious name,
 Wherewith that courtly garland moſt ye grace,
 And deck the world, adorne theſe verſes baſe :
 Not that theſe few lines can in them comprife
 Thoſe glorious ornaments of heavenly grace,
 Wherewith ye triumph ouer feeble eyes,
 And in ſubdued harts do tyranyſe ;
 For thereunto doth need a golden quill,
 And ſiluer leaues, them rightly to deuife,
 But to make humble preſent of good will :
 Which whenas timely meanes it purchaſe may,
 In ampler wiſe it ſelfe will forth diſplay.

E. S.

To all the gracious and beautifull Ladies
 in the Court.

THe Chian Peinſler, when he was requirde
 To pourtraiſt Venus in her perfect hew,
 To make his worke more absolute, deſird
 Of all the faireſt Maides to haue the vew.
 Much more me needs to draw the ſemblant trew,
 Of beauties Queene, the worlds ſole wonderment,
 To ſharpe my ſence with ſundry beauties vew,
 And ſteale from each ſome part of ornament.

*If all the world to seeke I ouerwent
 A fairer crew yet no where could I see,
 Then that braue court doth to mine eie present,
 That the worlds pride seemes gathered there to bee.
 Of each a part I stole by cunning thefte :
 Forgiue it me faire Dames, sith lesse ye haue not left.
 E. S.*

*To the right honourable the Lo.
 Burleigh, Lo. high Threasuer of England.*

TO you right noble Lord, whose carefull brest
 To menage of most graue affaires is bent,
 And on whose mightie shoulders most doth rest
 The burdein of this kingedomes gouernement,
 As the wide compasse of the firmament,
 On *Atlas* mighty shoulders is vpstayd ;
 Vnfitly I these ydle rimes present,
 The labor of lost time, and wit vnstayd ;
 Yet if their deeper sence be inly wayd,
 And the dim vele, with which from comune vew
 Their fairer parts are hid, aside be layd.
 Perhaps not vaine they may appeare to you.
 Such as they be, vouchsafe them to receaue,
 And wipe their faults out of your censure graue.
 E. S.

*To the right honourable the Lord of
 Hunsdon, high Chamberlaine to her Maiesty.*

RENOWMED Lord, that for your worthinesse
 And noble deeds haue your deserued place,

High in the fauour of that Emperesse,
 The worlds sole glory and her sexes grace,
 Here eke of right haue you a worthie place,
 Both for your neernes to that Faerie Queene,
 And for your own high merit in like cace,
 Of which, apparant prooffe was to be sene,
 When that tumultuous rage and fearfull deene
 Of Northerne rebels ye did pacify,
 And their disloiall powre defaced clene,
 The record of enduring memory.
 Liue Lord for euer in this lasting verse,
 That all posteritie thy honor may reherse.
 E. S.

*To the right honourable the Lord of
 Buckhurst, one of her Maiesties priuie Counsell.*

I N vain I thinke right honourable Lord,
 By this rude rime to memorize thy name ;
 Whose learned Muse hath writ her owne record,
 In golden verse, worthy immortal fame :
 Thou much more fit (were leasure to the fame)
 Thy gracious Souerain praifes to compile.
 And her imperiall Maiestie to frame,
 In loftie numbers and heroicke stile.
 But sith thou maist not so, giue leaue a while
 To baser wit his power therein to spend,
 Whose grosse defaults thy daintie pen may file,
 And vnaduised ouerfights amend.
 But euermore vouchsafe it to maintaine
 Against vile Zoilus backbitings vaine.

To the right honourable Sir Fr.

*Walsingham, knight, principall Secretary to her
Maiesty, and of her honourable Priuy
Counsell.*

THat Mantuane Poetes incompared spirit,
Whose girland now is set in highest place,
Had not *Mecenas* for his worthy merit,
It first aduaunst to great *Augustus* grace,
Might long perhaps haue lien in silence bace,
Ne bene so much admir'd of later age.
This lowly Muse, that learns like steps to trace,
Flies for like aide vnto your Patronage ;
That, as the great *Mecenas* of this age,
As wel to all that ciuil artes professe
As those that are inspir'd with Martiall rage,
And craues protection of her feeblenessse :
Which if ye yield, perhaps ye may her rayse
In bigger times to found your liuing prayse.

E. S.

To the right noble Lord and most

*valiaunt Captaine, Sir Iohn Norris knight, Lord
President of Mounster.*

WHo euer gaue more honourable prize
To the sweet Muse, then did the Martiall crew
That their braue deeds she might immortalize
In her shril tromp, and sound their praises dew ?
Who then ought more to fauour her, then you
Moste noble Lord, the honor of this age,
And Precedent of all that armes ensue ?

Whose warlike prowesse and manly courage
 Tempred with reason and aduizement sage
 Hath fild fad Belgiacke with victorious spoile,
 In *Fraunce* and *Ireland* left a famous gage,
 And lately shakt the Lusitanian soile.
 Sith then each where thou hast dispredd thy fame,
 Loue him, that hath eternized your name.

E. S.

*To the right honourable and most
 vertuous Lady, the Countesse of Penbroke.*

REmembraunce of that most Heroicke Spirit,
 The heuens pride, the glory of our daies,
 Which now triumpheth through immortall merit
 Of his braue vertues crownd with lasting baies,
 Of heuenlie blis and euerlasting praises ;
 Who first my Muse did lift out of the flore,
 To sing his sweet delights in lowlie laies ;
 Bids me most noble Lady to adore
 His goodly image liuing euermore,
 In the diuine refemblaunce of your face,
 Which with your vertues ye embellish more,
 And natie beauty deck with heauenlie grace.
 For his, and for your own especial sake,
 Vouchsafe from him this tokē in good worth to take.

E. S.

*To the right honourable the Earle
of Cumberland.*

REdoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind
The flowre of cheualry, now bloosming faire,
Doth promise fruite worthy the noble kind
Which of their praises haue left you the haire ;
To you this humble present I prepare,
For loue of vertue and of Martiall praise ;
To which though nobly ye inclined are,
As goodlie well ye shew'd in late assaies,
Yet braue ensample of long passed daies,
In which trew honor yee may fashioned see,
To like desire of honor may ye raise,
And fill your mind with magnanimitee.
Receive it, Lord, therefore, as it was ment,
For honor of your name and high descent.
E. S.

END OF VOL. VIII.







STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
STANFORD AUXILIARY LIBRARY
STANFORD, CALIFORNIA 94305-6004
(650) 723-9201

salcirc@sulmail.stanford.edu
All books are subject to recall.
DATE DUE

AUG 20 2004
JUN 20 2003

